

TEN SERMONS ON THE SECOND COMING

of

Our Lord Jesus Christ

Preached in the First Baptist Church, New York City
October 15 to December 17, 1916

BY THE PASTOR

I. M. HALDEMAN, D.D.

Author of Christian Science in the Light of Holy Scripture, How to Study the Bible, The Second Coming of Christ Pre-Millennial and Imminent, The Signs of the Times, Christ, Christianity and the Bible, The Mission of the Church in the World, Millennial Dawnism, Two Men and Russellism, Could Our Lord have Sinned, Does it make any Difference, What is it to Believe on Jesus, Why are we to Believe The Bible is inspired, etc., etc.

(Original Publisher)

NEW YORK CHICAGO

Fleming H. Revell Company

LONDON AND EDINBURGH

(Original Copyright)

COPYRIGHT, 1916, 1917. BY
CHARLES C. COOK

Printed in Canada by
BETHEL BAPTIST PRINT MINISTRY
London, ON, N6P 1A6
www.bethelbaptist.ca (Web)
info@bethelbaptist.ca (e-mail)
519-652-2619

CONTENTS

I.	OUR LORD JESUS CHRIST IS COMING TO THIS WORLD A SECOND TIME	5
II.	THE SECOND COMING OF CHRIST IN RELATION TO DOCTRINE, TO PROMISE, AND TO EXHORTATION	41
III.	IS THE COMING OF CHRIST BEFORE OR AFTER THE MILLENNIUM?.....	91
IV.	THE SECRET AND IMMINENT COMING OF CHRIST	137
V.	THE JUDGMENT SEAT OF CHRIST	181
VI.	THAT BLESSED HOPE.....	227
VII.	THE GREAT SEPARATION.....	273
VIII.	THE GREAT TRIBULATION.....	329
IX.	THE FALLING STONE, OR THE OVERTHROW OF THE LAST KAISER	373
X.	THE THOUSAND YEARS AND AFTER	419

**I.
OUR LORD JESUS CHRIST IS COMING TO THIS WORLD A SECOND
TIME**

OUR LORD JESUS CHRIST IS COMING TO THIS WORLD A SECOND TIME

BY REV. I. M. HALDEMAN, D.D.

YOU will find my text in Saint Paul's Epistle to the Hebrews, ninth chapter, twenty-eighth verse:

"... unto them that look for him shall he appear the second time. . ."

I desire to begin a series of sermons on the *SECOND* Coming of our Lord Jesus Christ. Many long years before I became Pastor of this Church, it was my privilege to present the truth, and at a time when my voice was almost the only one in the land that upheld it. In my extended pastorate here I have preached it in season and out of season; so that almost every sermon, exegesis and exposition has centered itself in it or proceeded forth from it. I desire to preach upon the theme again, not only in its complete and sequential order, but in relation to all dispensational and prophetic truth. I am led to do so because although many are now bearing testimony to the return of our Lord, the ignorance concerning it is still widespread and abysmal. There are Christians who actually read their Bible and yet statement after statement which ought to gleam and scintillate with power to awaken interest passes across their vision or through the mind and leaves no trace. The average minister with an open Bible before him knows nothing about it,—ignores it,—is afraid to preach it, or when he does not pervert it, radically rejects it.

The prejudice against the doctrine is amazingly great. It is said to be non-essential (and here I desire to speak parenthetically and say to you that of all foolish, absurd and actually stupid things uttered by the tongue of Christians or written by pen, nothing is more excuseless than this attempted arraignment of "non-essentials." If the Bible be the revelation of God, as He is the great economist and never wastes or does anything that is unnecessary, it is evident He could not and would not introduce into His infallible Book anything that was not essential. Whatever statement or doctrine therefore may be in the Bible, however apparently inconsequential and insignificant, is, nevertheless, essential. Since this doctrine of the Second Coming is very manifestly in, and a remarkable part of, the Bible it ought to be evident, to say the least, that the term "non-essential" cannot in any wise be applied to it.)

It is held by many to be sporadic, the outcome of an unsettled state of theological definition in the early centuries; that it has been handed down by ignorant, or half educated, or unequally balanced minds. The man therefore who in this hour of wheels, of machinery, of delicate mathematical constructions and the tidal sweep of materialism and sensuousness, dares to stand forth and preach the *SECOND COMING* of Christ is thought to be mentally uneven, the rider of a hobby, up in the air, and, at the very best—only a light and easy visionary. His sermons are supposed to have in them little that is practical, much that is sensational; and that their tendency is to disturb the Church, bring about schism and lead those Christians who accept the doctrine to go off at a tangent. The study of it, it is said, gives birth to foolish vagaries, to grotesque schemes of interpretation, encourages many to look upon themselves as certified prophets, and gives play to hectic and irresponsible imagination, rather than the cultivation of a sane and sober application of the principles and rules of a daily and dutiful life.

And yet—in the face of all this, it is a fact wholly beyond dispute that of all the wondrous things in this book written in letters of light, resplendent with the glory of God and resonant with the divine music, not one of them, not the fiat creation of the world, the stupendous fall of man, the birth of Christ, His death and resurrection, none of these immense facts occupies the space or receives such mention as the *SECOND COMING*.

The First Advent is without question, basic, fundamental, so much so that apart from it—Christianity could not even find letters to spell its name—and yet—foundational as it is—it is almost insignificant when compared to the mention of the Second Advent.

Neither the tongue of angels, nor men can fittingly describe the measure, the marvel and the glory of the cross; even the Holy Ghost with all His measureless powers finds Himself limited by the limitations of human vocabulary

when He seeks to portray it. In all the speech of men there is no word so great as this word, "Atonement." It is the revelation of the genius and the wisdom of God, of His law and His love, of His justice and mercy, His hatred of sin and His love of the sinner, His rejection of merit and His gift of grace. It is a revelation of how He has found a way in which He can be just and yet a justifier of the ungodly: and yet—that word "Atonement" occurs but once in the New Testament, and there should not be translated atonement but "reconciliation," the consequence of atonement; but the statement concerning the Second Coming of Christ occurs in the New Testament—*once in every twenty verses*.

It begins with the beginning.

In the first chapter of Genesis God speaks and sun and moon and stars, constellations, systems of constellations, and measureless nebulae sweep forward in that infinite harmony which the silence of the skies proclaims. In the second chapter man is formed from the dust of the earth, his soul kindled with the flame of the divine breath. In the third chapter he sins, he falls and the whole race goes down in the wreck of his sin. Side by side with his sin and woe is the promise of redemption. The first woman stands forth in all the beauty of her fresh creation, but stands there with the shame of her sin, and as she listens to the voice of judgment which condemns her husband and herself to go forth as wanderers in the earth, learns, not only that the serpent shall bruise her seed, the foreseen and promised Redeemer, but this very Redeemer shall bruise the serpent's head. Turn to the last chapter of Saint Paul's Epistle to the Romans (See Rom. 16:20) and you will find the serpent (that old serpent which is the Devil and Satan) (See Rev. 20:2; 12:9) is to be bruised beneath the feet of our Lord Jesus Christ at His Second Coming: and if you will turn still further to the nineteenth chapter of the Revelation you will behold a scenic description of that event in the hour when the door in heaven opens and the Son of God, as the Word of God, as King of kings and Lord of lords is seen coming down the slant of heaven with the thunderous echo of His steeds of judgment, followed by the thronging armies of His righteousness clad saints. He lays hold on Satan, binds him with a great chain, casts him into the bottomless pit and bruises him beneath His heel for a thousand years; and thus it is evident that side by side with this first announcement of the First Advent in that far away Eden time is the first announcement of the *SECOND*.

In the sixth chapter of Genesis you will see the flood gates of heaven opened, the fountains of the great deep broken up and all but eight of a guilty world swept away, while over the rush and terror of the seething waters the voice of the Son of God is heard saying, "But as the days of Noe were, so shall also the coming of the Son of man be;" (Matt. 24:37); and when next you stand upon some mountain height and see the line of shells deposited there by invading waves which once drowned all the high hills and made the swinging globe a dark and watery waste, pick up that shell, hear in it still the sound of the receding deep and let it repeat to you, that as it was in the days of Noah, so shall it be when the Son of Man comes: and let the flood proclaim to you the Son of God is Coming a *SECOND* time.

If it be your privilege to journey to Palestine, go yonder to that Dead Sea whose every wave rolls over the spot where the cities of the plain, Sodom and Gomorrah, went down in the wrath of Him whose breath like a fiery flame consumed them; and above the depths where the buried cities lie hear the voice of the Son of God saying, "Likewise also as it was in the days of Lot; (in Sodom). . . Even thus shall it be in the day when the Son of man is revealed;" (Luke 17:28,30) and let the Dead Sea as the burial place of a dead city and the judgment tomb of indescribable vice, tell out with its bituminous swirl and swish that the Son of God is coming a Second time and coming not only with grace but with vengeance in His heart.

Not only is the Second Coming portrayed in the open statements and quivering accents of inspired prophets, but in the pictured prophecies of illuminating types, living figures and colorful symbols.

Abraham under the command of God took his son to the top of the mount which he reached after a *three days'* journey, laid him upon the prepared altar, lifted his knife to slay that unresisting son (doing so in the confidence God would raise him from the dead) when the voice of the Almighty bade him take a ram caught by its horns in the thicket and sacrifice it as a substitute in his stead. He raised him up from the altar in an act which was typical of resurrection: the son then disappears from view; but Abraham calls his servant Eliezer and bids him go forth to find a wife for his son. He finds her at a well drawing water. He enters with her the house of her brother Laban, the fleshly man, takes out the pack of precious things sent from the father in the name of the son and shows them to her; and as she consents to be the bride, leads her forth to meet him, talking to her of him by the way; when, suddenly, unheralded the son appears, comes forth to meet her and take her to himself.

Two thousand years after, on this very spot, the Son of God offered Himself as a sacrifice for sin, a substitute for the sinner, then on the third day rose from the dead; for two thousand years He has like Isaac disappeared from view; but the Holy Spirit like Eliezer has come forth from the Father in the name of the Son to seek for Him a bride and to call her by His name,— the Church, THE CHRIST. He is finding her at the Gospel well, the well of glad tidings and of living water. One by one as we believe we become members of that bride, because we become members of His spiritual body; the Spirit enters into our fleshly lives, as Eliezer into the house of Laban, and unfolds the Bible as the pack of precious things sent from the Father in the name of the Son. He is leading us along the way of time and circumstance, talking to us of the unseen and absent Bridegroom when, suddenly, He will come into the air and take the Church to Himself, and thus this story of Eliezer seeking a bride, and the coming forth of Isaac to meet Rebekah, is the full and analogic, but prophetic picture of the Second Coming of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, the Head of the Spiritual Body, and His Bride, the Church.

Jacob wearied with his flight from home lies down at eventide there in the plain of Luz and takes for his pillow a cold and barren stone, while the quiet stars watch him from afar. As he sleeps he dreams; and then a vision of the night is on him. He sees a ladder of gold leaning against the shining sky. At the top of it he beholds the Holy One of Israel, none other than the Christ of God who is to be. He sees Him coming with ten thousands of the heavenly host. He listens while the Lord declares to him that all the land on which he lies shall be his and his posterity's after him; and that of his seed shall come a nation—and this nation shall have temporal sovereignty in the end of days; he wakes to learn, and we learn with him, that the nation of Israel shall find its permanent and abiding place in the land of Palestine, be the head and no longer the tail of nations, and find its consummation in the hour when the Son of God shall come as the covenant seed of Abraham, the seed of Israel, the seed of Jacob and heir of David's throne; and this, when He comes a *SECOND* time.

Joseph is the son of his father's old age, goes out to visit his brethren, is rejected by them, is cast into the pit of death, taken out alive and sent into the far country, into Egypt, is there exalted to co-rulership on the throne, takes a wife from among the Gentiles and at a determined hour, with her, goes forth in his chariot of glory that he may bring his father's house and his brethren after the flesh in to Goshen the promised land of Egypt.

Our Lord Jesus Christ is the Son of eternity, the Son of the infinite Father. He was sent to His brethren in the flesh, they rejected Him, cast Him into the pit and place of death. God took Him out alive. He has taken Him into that far country, into the highest heaven itself, He has exalted Him to the throne as a co-ruler with Himself, He is now, as also typified in the story of Isaac, getting a bride from among the Gentiles. At a predetermined moment He will come forth with His chariot with ten thousand times ten thousands of His angels that He may bring His father's house, His brethren after the flesh, the Jews into the promised land of earth, into Palestine; and thus the story of Joseph is the typical story of the Lord, and finds its prophetic climax in His Coming a *SECOND* time.

David goes up the slopes of Olivet, bareheaded, bent back, bare-footed, his face washed in tears, a man of sorrows and acquainted with grief, a rejected king. Later on, he comes back with a mighty host, the victor's shout, crosses Jordan, enters Jerusalem, and sits a king in lordly fashion on Zion's heights. Surely, we know our Lord was a man of sorrows and acquainted with grief. Behold Him on the slopes of Olivet, weeping over the city of His love as His gaze sweeps down the centuries of the coming woe, by that city is repudiated, goes forth a rejected King, goes forth to death and the grave. But, behold, He is to come back with the victor shout and song, cross Jordan from the east as He comes from Idumaea up, enter Jerusalem and enthrone Himself on Zion's heights as Lord and King; and this when He comes a *SECOND* time.

And this Second Coming of Christ inspires David to draw his fingers across his golden harp strings, evolve the loftiest notes and sing in his most daring and exalted symbols. He speaks of that hour when the heavens shall bow down to the earth; when the waves of the sea shall lift their tidal voices and break with triumphant tumult on all the shores; when the hills shall melt and flow down as the sea; when all the trees of the wood as transfigured witnesses shall clap their hands; when all voices in earth, in hell and heaven shall cry out till the whole universe is full of the refrain, "He cometh, He cometh—He cometh to rule the earth in righteousness and truth: He is coming a *second* time."

The prophets choose their choicest words and find their noblest phrase when they seek to portray the *Second Coming* of our Lord.

Isaiah sees Zion exalted above all the hills and the Lord's house crowning all the lifted heights. He hears the war sword's final clangor as into plough shares beaten, and beholds the spears as pruning hooks amid the gathered

fruitage of the growing vines. The law goes forth from Zion and the Word of God prevails; and this they teach, when the Lord comes, not the first, but “the *SECOND TIME*.”

Micah announces when the Lord comes the second time war shall cease and men shall learn its ways no more, but each beneath his own vine and fig tree shall sit, none daring to molest nor make afraid.

Joel declares the voice of the Lord shall be heard from Jerusalem. He will overthrow the enemies of Israel and Zion shall be His dwelling place forever.

Zechariah testifies the Lord is coming, coming with all His saints: that His feet in that day shall stand upon the mount of Olives which is on the east before Jerusalem, it shall cleave in twain and roll forth as a platform for His feet, and the feet of His saints; and because this has never taken place, it is not at His First, but at His *SECOND* coming.

When you open the last chapter of Malachi, the Lord is seen, not at His First Advent, but at His Second, arising as a sun of righteousness with healing in His wings, ready to cast His benediction and His bounty on the earth before He smites it with a curse.

Then we close the Old Testament with its multiplied and precise announcements of the Second Coming of our Lord, and lean across four centuries of prophetic silence. As we listen we hear the sound of angel song; we hear the Gloria in Excelsis; beneath the star lit sky a babe is born, and we rejoice at the *First* Advent of the Christ; but scarcely have we done listening to this rapt announcement of the *First* Advent when we hear the Christ Himself grown to manhood and to ministry proclaiming not His *First* Coming but His *SECOND*.

He speaks of it in parable, in open discourse and story.

He tells His disciples that a householder called his servants about him, gave to each one of them a work to do, bade the porter watch and said, “I am going into a far country, but I am coming back at an hour when ye think not. It may be at evening when the sun is low, it may be at midnight, in the deepest darkness and when the stars arise. It may be in the cock crowing when the night begins to advance, or it may be in the gray of morning when the dawn begins to turn through rose and purple to the gold of day.”

And the Lord said to them, “You are the house and you are the servants, you have each of you your work, and the Holy Ghost shall keep the door. I am going yonder into the land of ‘far distance,’ into heaven above; but I am coming back, I am coming a *second* time and at an hour when ye think not. It may be in the evening as the age draws to its close. It may be in the midnight when the spiritual darkness is deep. It may be at the cock crowing when the sound of trumpets begins to be heard. It may be in the blaze of the morning, in the splendor of that new day that shall dawn as the *Day of God*. What I say unto one I say unto all—Watch ! Watch! be ready! for I am coming a *SECOND* time.”

He compares His return to that of a bridegroom who comes at midnight to meet the waiting bride’s maids and with them enter into the marriage chamber, to the marriage supper and the joy.

He says He is coming as King of glory to sit upon the throne of His glory, as the throne of the Lord, in Jerusalem, to enter into judgment of the nations, and to judge them according to the fashion in which they have treated His brother in the flesh, the Jew.

Then in that last discourse upon Olivet when His disciples come and ask Him what shall be the sign of His coming, He tells them of multiplied war, of famine and pestilence walking together cheek by jowl, of shattering earthquake, of false apostles, of deceitful workers, of distress of nations, of men’s hearts failing them for fear; and then declares He will come as the lightning shines from the east to the west and with all His holy angels.

But on that night of nights, at the last supper, when every heart was mute with sadness; when they were quivering at the very thought that He who had led them so long among the hills and vales of earth was going away, He bids them look up at the crystalline arch of the nightly stars, and speaks to them words that should be let with diamond pointed pen into the face of an eternal rock, such words as these:

“Let not your heart be troubled: ye believe in God, believe also in me. In my Father’s house are many mansions: if *it were not* so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, *I will come again*, and receive you unto myself; that where I am, there ye may be also.” (John 14:1-3)

And then, in that tragic hour, in that garish morning light when He stood before His judges, mocked, spit upon, bound, a rope about His neck as when a lamb is to slaughter led; standing on the threshold of His shameful death,

He said to them that thereafter they should see Him sitting on the right hand of power and coming in the clouds of heaven.

Then they crucified Him. They put Him to death. They laid Him in the grave and rolled the stone to the door of His tomb. His sun seemed to go down at mid-noon; but the third day He rose, forty days later He ascended from the midst of His disciples, and as they saw Him swallowed up and lost to gaze in the deeps of the upper infinite; even while they watched Him through their wonder and their tears, two men in white from the other country stood by their side and said unto them:

“ . . . Ye men of Galilee, why stand ye gazing up into heaven? this same Jesus, which is taken up from you into heaven, *shall so come in like manner* as ye have seen him go into heaven.” (Acts 1:11)

After the day of Pentecost, the Apostle Peter with John went up into the temple to pray. They saw a lame man there. Peter in the name of the Lord Jesus bade him rise up and walk. He did so leaping and running into the temple. The people followed him and a great crowd gathered about the Apostles, asking them how it was done. Peter answered he had not healed the man with his own power but by the name and, therefore, by the power of Jesus. Then he told them that He whom they had crucified and put to death was the Prince of life, the Author of life—and if they should repent and turn unto the Lord, the Father would send Him back. Having said this he quoted all the prophets from Samuel and assured them these prophets with one accord foretold that this crucified but now risen Lord would come a *SECOND* time.

Yonder in Jerusalem a great council, the first council of all the Churches, was gathered to deliberate and determine upon spiritual things. James the Apostle rose up and said it was necessary Christians should understand this age: in this age God was not seeking to convert the world, but was calling out from among the Gentiles a people for His name, a people to faith in the name of His Son; when this taking out was complete, when the Church number was filled up, the Lord would come back, would build up the nation of Israel; and in support of his testimony turned to the Old Testament, quoting from the prophet Amos, and thus from Amos proclaimed that the Lord is coming a *SECOND* time.

Paul writes to the Church at Rome that the whole creation is groaning and travailing in pain together until now. If you will put your ear to the bosom of the earth, the mother of us all, you will hear the moaning, the heaving sigh, the splash of tears, the tread of tragedy, the footstep and the voice of suffering; everywhere anguish and sorrow, heartache, mystery, confusion and increasing lamentation; but, lo, the whole creation is on the tiptoe of expectation, waiting for the manifestation of the sons of God, waiting for the Coming of the Son of God and His glory; then shall creation break her bands of corruption, be delivered into the glorious liberty of the Son of God and flash on amid the rhythmic splendors of the shining spheres. Thus shall this battle stained and sin scarred earth be delivered at the *SECOND COMING* of our Lord.

He tells the Corinthian Church in the first chapter of the first epistle to see to it that they come behind in no gift, waiting for the Coming of the Lord. In the fifteenth chapter, in which every verse is like a string of pearls, he says the Lord is coming to waken the dust of those who sleep in His name. The trumpet shall sound, the dead shall be raised and the living changed; and this resurrection and transfiguration, it is affirmed, will take place among those who are “*Christ’s at His coming.*” (1 Cor. 15:23)

He tells the Philippian Church that we who believe are citizens of a country which is in heaven; from whence also we look for a Saviour, even our Lord Jesus Christ. He is coming to change these bodies of our limitation. (And lo! we are limited, indeed). Here is a man with a will like iron and a body too weak to sustain it; a mind full of leaping desires and plans and high suggestions, and a body that cabins, cribs and confines them, a body full of temperamental and physical hindrances; but Paul says, Our Lord Jesus Christ is coming from heaven a second time and by His power, the same power by which He rose from the dead and upholds the universe, will change these bodies of our daily limitations and fashion them like unto the body of His glory.

He assures the Colossians when Christ died on yonder cross we who believe, died with Him, and were put to death judicially in Him, as our representative and substitute. When He rose from the dead and ascended to heaven, we rose and ascended in Him representatively. He is there as our life, our spiritual and eternal life. Our life is therefore hid in Him, and as He is hid in God, we are doubly hidden and secured in the deity of the Father and the Son; but Christ is coming forth: He is coming forth a second time and in glory, and therefore says Paul when He who is our life shall appear then shall ye also appear with Him in glory.

Paul’s first epistle to the Churches was written to the Christians at Thessalonica. In his letter he commends

them because they had turned to God from idols to serve the living and the true God and to wait for His Son from heaven. He finds them sorrowing over their dead and not certain as to what relation they should sustain to the Coming of the Lord; and he says to them they are not to sorrow as others which have no hope; but just so surely as these Christian dead have been put to sleep by Jesus, even as a mother puts her babe to sleep, so surely when He comes He will bring them with Him; and Paul says, I am saying this to you by a special revelation from the Son Himself, that when the Lord descends from heaven, He will do so with a shout, the voice of the archangel and the trump of God, and the dead in Christ shall rise first, then these who are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in clouds to meet the Lord in the air and so shall they ever be with the Lord.

He says the Coming will be like a thief in the night. In the first epistle to the Thessalonians he makes it plain the Lord is coming *for* the Church; in the second epistle he shows that after He has come for His Church He will come *with* her, and she shall be associated with Him in that hour of hours when He overthrows the man of sin, puts an end to the hierarchy of the Devil and brings in the reign of righteousness and peace.

So full is the Apostle of this theme of the Second Coming that at the close of *each chapter* in *both* epistles he speaks of and describes it.

To Timothy the young preacher, he writes and says: "Timothy, I am an old man now. I am Paul the aged; but Timothy, 'I have fought a good fight, I have finished my course, I have kept the faith: Henceforth there is laid up for me a crown of righteousness, which the Lord the righteous judge shall give me at that day; and not to me only, but unto all them also, that love His appearing.'" (See II Tim. 4:6-8)

A crown, a crown of righteousness, not a rebuke for having dealt with that which was nonessential, but a crown of righteousness to all who love the Second Coming of the Lord.

He writes to Titus and testifies the Second Coming is the *blessed hope*. "Looking for that blessed hope, and the glorious appearing of the great God and our Saviour Jesus Christ." (Titus 2:13)

He writes to Hebrew Christians and talks to them about *Yom Kippur*. *Yom* signifies "day," and *Kippur* comes from a Hebrew verb "to cover." *Yom Kippur* means the "day of covering." *Yom Kippur* was recently celebrated all over the world wherever there was a colony or company of Jews. *Yom Kippur* was that day in October when the Jews first, in the wilderness, assembled about the Tabernacle while Aaron the high priest slew the bullocks and took their blood within the veil, sprinkling it upon the mercy seat. He did the same thing with the blood of the sacrificial goat. The blood made atonement, reconciled the people ceremonially to God, covered over their sins typically in His sight; hence it was called the day of covering. Then the high priest took the live goat, confessed upon it the sins of the people and handed it over to a chosen man, a man selected for the occasion and called the fit man, the man of opportunity. He put a rope around its head and led it away into a part of the country uninhabited, out of sight. The people waited for him to return, expected him to come back. Presently, they saw him coming, but without the scape goat, without the sin offering; and thus for another year the people were ceremonially secured from judgment, and guaranteed the care and fellowship of God.

Paul tells the Hebrew Christians, and in telling them tells us, that yonder on the cross our Lord Jesus Christ died as the great sin offering; that when with a loud voice He cried "It is finished," (John 19:30) He was announcing, not only that His covenant promise with the Father was kept, but that the type, the figure and symbol of *Yom Kippur* was fulfilled in Him; as it is written: "... once in the end of the world hath he appeared to put away sin by the *sacrifice of Himself*." (Heb. 9:26)

Our Lord Jesus Christ is both victim and high priest, as the high priest He arose, ascended, and with His own blood went within the upper veil and there full atonement made. He ascended there also as the chosen man, the fit man, the man of opportunity. From that hour to this has been *Yom Kippur*, *Yom Kippur* was but a shadow. The real *Yom Kippur* is today. Today we are living in the age and *dispensation of Yom Kippur or Atonement*. But like the Children of Israel our gaze as believers is turned toward the far country, the country unseen, heaven itself; and we are waiting for our Lord Jesus Christ to come the *Second* time as the chosen man, the fit man, the man of opportunity. Wherefore says Paul to the Hebrews, "... unto them that look for him shall he appear the *second* time without sin (that is without the sin offering) unto salvation," (Heb. 9:28) unto the guaranteed and eternal salvation of all who claim Him as sacrifice, sin offering, *scape goat* and substitute.

Do you understand this text now, and do you catch the voluminous accent of its meaning? "... unto them that look for him shall he appear the *second time* without sin unto salvation."

Peter declares we should love, and rejoice in, the appearing of Christ. James testifies "... the Coming of the Lord draweth nigh." (James 5:8) "... the judge standeth before the door." (James 5:9)

The Apostle John says the world did not know our Lord Jesus Christ as the Son of God, and they do not know we are His sons now. They do not know what we are to be; but we know we shall be like Him. We shall see Him as He is and the very sight of Him will transfigure us with His likeness and His glory.

And this hope, the hope of the Second Coming, he says is a purifying hope. It is not a mere empty and inefficient vision, but a hope so buttressed on reality that it will lead those who really hold it to separate themselves from all evil and sin and to walk becomingly in the name of Him for whom they wait.

John is not satisfied with saying all this. He affirms there are those who do not hesitate to *deny* our Lord Jesus Christ is coming a second time *in the flesh*. He says all who deny this, all who for a moment refuse to believe He is coming a second time in the flesh, in bodily fashion, as the man who died, are antichrists, and deceivers. With inspired speech he says if anyone should come to you and not bring the true doctrine of God and Christ, you are not to receive him into your house, nor bid him Godspeed; if you do, you are a partaker of his evil deeds and God will hold you as guilty as he.

Then we take up the little epistle of Jude and find he quotes from the book of Enoch, Enoch the seventh man from Adam. We find this Enoch walked with God for three hundred years amid the riot and the revel of an ungodly world; so walked above its iniquity and shame in fellowship with truth and righteousness that God took him home without dying; and this Enoch, in his book written more than three thousand years before the first advent, testifies not about the first, but the SECOND saying: "... Behold, the Lord cometh with ten thousands of his saints." (Jude 1:14)

This brings us to the last book of the Bible, the book of the Revelation. The book was written under peculiar circumstances and specially and specifically inspired.

When our Lord Jesus Christ ascended to heaven, God the Father gave Him a full revelation of His Second Coming.

Our Lord gave that revelation to an angel and bade him give it to John, the John who had leaned upon His breast at supper, and the John who wrote the fourth Gospel, the Gospel of Grace and Glory.

John was in the island of Patmos, a persecuted prisoner of Rome for his Master's sake. To him the Lord appeared in glory in the island prison and bade him write the Revelation in a book and send it to the Churches.

The subject of the book, the whole book, is the *SECOND COMING* of the Lord; for, this very word "Revelation," is "Apocalypse" and signifies "Unveiling." It is the unveiling and revealing of our Lord Jesus Christ, the full and wondrous picture of His Second Coming; wherefore in the very first chapter and in that portion of it which is the introduction to the whole book, he says, "Behold, he cometh with clouds; and every eye shall see him. ..." (Rev. 1:7)

Every chapter is related to this Second Coming, weaving about it the movement among the nations, the gathering for the conflict, the loosening of the spirits and the bonds of evil, sickness and disease and pestilence, falling out of the very air; unseen and demoniacal powers behind visible wickedness, hardening judgments which only tend to inflame the Satanism of the hour; increased wickedness and monstrosity responding to every judicial whip lash and probing; and then at the end of a description in which we hear the sound of trumpets, and the rush of the multitude, like the rushing of the seas; after we have been given a picture of the climactic moment when the Lord shall descend and crash into the dust with the iron flail of His Sceptre the organized iniquity that has opposed Him, we hear Him saying in a speech full of persistent and persuasive pathos, "Surely, truly indeed, I am Coming. I am coming quickly. I am coming a *SECOND* time."

And thus it is evident this doctrine of the Second Coming is inwrought with every fibre of the Bible and from end to end is an essential and vital part of it. So inwrought is it with all its texture and testimony that if I should take out of it every direct statement made concerning the Second Coming, all correlative propositions, doctrines, promises and exhortations, together with the wide sweeping ultimate concerning it, there would be nothing left of the Bible but shreds and tatters. Who is he then who talks about the Second Coming of Christ being nonessential and unimportant?

Unimportant!

I hope by the grace of God later on to show it to be so important that it is bound up actually and indissolubly with every fundamental doctrine, every practical exhortation, every sublime promise and every radiant hope; and

that unless you know this doctrine you cannot read your Bible intelligently, you have no key to open its locks, slip back its bolts and fling wide the doors to the ivory galleries of the King.

Who is he then who will say we can talk too much and preach too much about it?

But not only does the doctrine of the Second Coming have to suffer from ignorance, indifference and prejudice, but from lawless perversion and false teaching.

There are those who teach the Second Coming of the Lord means the coming of the Spirit; but the Lord's own statement about the coming of the Spirit ought to be all sufficient answer.

He said, ". . . if I go not away, the Comforter (the Holy Spirit) will not come unto you; but if I *depart*, I will send him unto you." (John 16:7) "If I go the Spirit will come," and therefore the Coming of the Spirit does not mean the Coming of the Lord, but going of the Lord. Get it and hold it fast. The *Coming* of the *Spirit* is the *Going* of the Lord; and the *presence* of the Spirit means the *bodily absence* of the Lord; therefore the Coming of the Spirit is *not* the Coming of the Lord.

It is said the Lord came at the siege of Jerusalem; and there are those who make the twenty-fourth chapter of Matthew and the tribulation therein described as the base of such teaching; for the sake of argument admitting the suffering and anguish of the siege to have been the great tribulation (which it was not), it is written, "Immediately after the tribulation of those days. . . shall appear the sign of the Son of Man in heaven. . . and they shall see the Son of Man coming in the clouds of heaven, with power and great glory." (Matt. 24:29,30)

I suppose you have read history, and you know after Jerusalem had been taken and Titus had run his plough share over the ruins, the sign of the Son of Man did *not* appear in the heaven; neither did the Son of God Himself appear with His cohorts of Holy Angels and all the earth bending, some in adoration and others in fear before Him.

In the nature of the case, and overwhelmingly so, the siege and destruction of Jerusalem was *not* the Coming of Christ.

There are those who teach our Lord Jesus Christ comes each time a Christian dies; and I have no doubt you have heard funeral sermons or addresses delivered from the text ". . . in such an hour as ye think not the Son of man cometh" (Matt. 24:44) and the application of it made to the hour of death. But the Scriptures make it demonstrably clear and plain when a Christian dies the Lord does not come to the Christian, but the Christian goes to the Lord; as it is written by the Apostle, I have ". . . a desire to depart, and to be with Christ;" (Philip. 1:23) and again, ". . . absent from the body, and to be present with the Lord." (II Cor. 5:8) But yonder in the assembly of the Jewish Sanhedrin the whole truth is demonstrated and proved. Stephen is before them. He arraigns them for their unbelief and charges them with guilt in rejecting Jesus as their Messiah. By the power of the Holy Ghost he looks into the opened heavens and sees Jesus standing at the right hand of God and cries out and says, ". . . I see the heavens opened, and the Son of man standing on the right hand of God." (Acts 7:56) They rushed upon him with gnashing of teeth, cast him out and stoned him and he kneeling down cried with a loud voice, ". . . Lord Jesus, receive my Spirit." (Acts 7:59) He did not say, "Jesus *Come* to me," but "Jesus *Receive* me."

And this great action on the part of the Lord, and this relation of the believer to Him, takes place each time a Christian dies. The Christian at death goes to be with the Lord, and as each redeemed spirit departs and ascends to Him, He rises up to receive and welcome that spirit to its new abode.

The death of the Christian then is *not* the Coming of Christ, but the *going of the Christian to Christ*.

There are those who teach our Lord's Coming takes place in providential dealings and events.

He comes each time a cyclone lays waste a city or a land; each time a tidal wave lifts itself upon the shore, invading homes, destroying industries and swallowing up the lives both of evil and of good; each time a bridge breaks down, a ship sinks, a train runs off the track, the shiver of an earthquake or the pestilence that offers its holocaust. Think of the grotesque conception of any school of theological interpretation which endeavors to pass off a pestilence, a fever, or the shadow of death, as the Coming of Him who is life and health itself, the victor over death and the grave; but there is a threefold answer to all this fumbling and folly of excuseless and irresponsible interpretations.

First of all it is written, "For the *Lord Himself* shall descend from heaven. . ." (I Thess. 4:16). The *Lord Himself*, not winds, nor clouds, nor storm and darkness, not fever nor pain nor disease nor impersonal things, but—*The Lord Himself*.

Second. When the Lord comes in His final glory *every eye shall see Him*.

Third. And this is the cumulative, climactic, and irresistible demonstration and proof, this scheme of providential events is not only not true, but scarcely worth the while to answer; for, if our Lord Jesus Christ came when the Holy Ghost came, at the siege and destruction of Jerusalem, each time a Christian dies, at every manifestation of providence, in all cataclysmic and catastrophic events and circumstances, then He has not come twice nor thrice nor ten, nor a hundred, nor a thousand times, since He went away, but millions of times; and this would reduce the whole proposition of the Coming again to monumental nonsense, childish perversion and a farcical exegesis worthy only to the crowned with cap and bells; but the text from which I am preaching, thunderously and irresistibly answers all this folly; as it is written, “. . . unto them that look for Him shall He appear the *Second* time . . .” (Heb. 9:28). Not three times or four times and all the rest of it, but a *SECOND* time.

From all this then which so far has been said, it ought to be evident, altogether self evident, that the Coming of our Lord Jesus Christ is a personal, definite and *SECOND COMING*.

And because this Second Coming is so bound up and interwoven with every filament and fibre in the fabric of the Book, and has employed all the wealth of human speech, all figure, symbol and type, all the powers of the Eternal Spirit to set forth, portray and intimately illustrate; because the Book opens with the announcement of it, and ends with the voice of the Lord in special accents of gentleness and tenderness, graciously and yet authoritatively assuring it, it is not only of supreme importance as so manifestly proclaimed, but of immense and insistent necessity.

It is necessary, in order that our Lord Jesus Christ may demonstrate the validity of His personal and essential claims.

He claimed to be Son of God and God the Son, the heir of the world and the disposer of the destinies of men. He made heaven and hell for a human soul depend upon the relation of that soul to Himself, and so claimed the right and prerogative as infinite God that were He not such, He was the most arrant and wicked deceiver who ever sought to blind and entrap the sons of men: as such the Jews denounced Him, and hailed Him, and sent Him to the cross of shame.

But let Him come down the dome of yonder sky with His eyes as a flame of fire and His voice as the sound of many waters, and men shall call the rocks and the mountains to fall upon them and will own that He is God and Lord and Judge of human kind.

It is necessary He should come to make good His claims as the King of Israel.

He carried His credentials as such with Him. He could point to Joseph His adopted father, a prince of the house of David, as the channel of His legal claim to David's throne. He could point to His mother as a princess of the House of David, and through her by actual descent through Nathan from David himself, as lineal heir of David's throne, as David's Lord and Israel's King. He carried His credentials every day in the miracles He wrought. Miracles which had been foretold, stamped, sealed and made so clear no man could blunder nor mistake, together with fulfillment of events and conditions so marked and true, that at every step they proclaimed Him and proved Him to be the Sent of God; but in the face of the most marvellous verification ever made, either by God or man, the judicially blinded and guilty nation rejected Him, nailed Him to the cross, while over Him was written by a Roman Governor's divinely directed hand, “This is the King of the Jews.” (Luke 23:38)

But let Him come with His schekinal clouds, His encircling host of angelic guards, with song of seraphim and might of cherubim, with the echoing of ten thousand times ten thousands of celestial harps, and all the music of a choral universe; let Him stand on that Olivet from whose slope He ascended; let Him blaze forth in the meridian splendor that shall cause the sun to dwindle as a shadow beneath His feet, and the repentant Jew, always moved by signs and wonders, will fall down, confess, and say unto Him, “Lo thou art our God, we have waited for Thee.”

It is necessary that He should come to justify the faith of the long, long, waiting ages.

O, how men have believed and trusted and watched and hoped and died, as they called on His name. He must come to justify the rack, the stake, the torture. If the God of heaven do not send Him back, if He has looked on at all this sacrifice and agony and faith and unhesitating death for Christ's sake, has had no intention to, and never will, send Him, then God is, Himself, unspeakably guilty of allowing the sons of men to be ensnared, entrapped and wholly deceived in the false statement and misrepresentation of the Word He Himself has inspired. Nay! the blood of the martyrs cries out from every gibbet, and from every place of heroic devotion, “Come Thou Son of God, Come

once more.”

It is necessary He should come to give peace, not only to individual hearts, but to the world as a system of government among men.

Up to this hour human government has been a huge and costly failure. From the beginning it has been a series of unbroken war, battle, blood, tyranny, oppression, anguish and woe. At the present moment some twenty of the nations of the earth are at each other's throats, trampling one another in the mud and red mire of blood. The banner of civilization woven through centuries of self gratulation has been torn into shreds and the rags and tatters of it flung out upon the gusty winds and driving storms of the loosened tempest of man's wild beast and brutal passions. And there is no betterment promised for the future.

Whatever nation comes forth victorious from the war, England, Germany, or Russia, there will be the impulse for greater conflict. If England win, she will have a sentimental score to settle with America; and both America and England will face each other with intensity of national determination on the issue of the world's commerce and the world's industry. If Germany win, she too, will have a score to settle with this country, and heavy answers to give to what she will count as comfort to her foe; and that little yellow spot of self exalted heathenism in the East, growing and throwing out its octopus like tentacles over the Pacific's waters is reaching far beyond its island home. If Russia win, England and India and the East, will become factors in complications whose peril no man can measure. Everywhere and at every turn the multiplication of complications and the frenzy and insanity of self-interest under the leadership and culminating ambition of the Devil, will make the earth the arena for the wars and rumors of wars of which the Son of God foretold, and for the universal impact that shall gather all nations to battle.

On all the horizon no angel of peace is seen, only the black formless things of discord, of confusion and of ever resounding conflict.

It is necessary, therefore, that He should come to lay His hand upon earth's fevered pulses, to evoke order out of chaos and bring in that government of righteousness and peace whose wide fulfillment shall be earth's most golden hour.

He must come to make Salvation complete.

Salvation is *not* complete, Paul in yonder heaven with Christ is only *half saved*. All the saints of God who are there and every Christian who dies and departs to be with Christ, are only *half saved*.

How can any Christian be more than half saved so long as the body which was redeemed by blood and sealed by the indwelling of the Holy Spirit, lies mouldering in the grave?

That other half is still under the Devil's grip.

The Devil has the power of death; on all mortal bodies he has a legal mortgage signed and sealed. The grave is his house, the bodies are his goods, and he is the "strong man armed," (Luke 11:21) armed with that law which says, "death passed upon all men," (Rom. 5:12) and "it is appointed unto men once to die." (Heb. 9:27)

The Devil holds the goods.

The saints of God in heaven, though they be clothed with robes of white, wrought in the looms of God, are at best but manifested ghosts, disembodied souls, who wait the clothing which their bodies alone may give.

They lack their full salvation.

Hear what the Apostle says:

"...now is our salvation nearer than when we believed." (Rom. 13:11)

How can Paul say that when he above all other apostles has declared all who believe, and from the very moment when they believed, were then and are now securely and doubly saved because their life is hid with Christ in God? How can our salvation be nearer when the Son of God Himself has said, "He that believeth on Me hath everlasting life," (John 6:47) and that none can pluck them out of His Father's hand?

The answer is, salvation is threefold, *for us*, *in us*, and *upon us*. It is ours in the death of Christ which delivers us from the *penalty* of sin; ours in the communicated life of Christ and indwelling of the Holy Spirit which are able to deliver us from the *power* of sin; and ours, when our *bodies* are redeemed from the clasp and corruption of *death*, and made immortal.

Not till a Christian receives his body from the dust or is changed while living and transfigured; not till he is

clothed upon by an immortal body, is salvation according to the eternal purpose and promise of God complete.

And the resurrection of the body and the transfiguration of the saints can take place only when the Son of God, our Lord Jesus Christ, He who is the resurrection and the life, shall come the *SECOND* time.

It is necessary that He shall come.

It is necessary that He shall speak, and bid the graves, on land and sea, give up their purchased dead.

Thus the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ a second time is not only a supreme necessity, but the hope of all hopes.

It is the hope of the world.

The hope of all the nations of the earth; the Gentile nations, the white, the black, the red, the brown and yellow, peoples of all kindreds and tongues. It is their only hope for that hour when war shall cease, and be learned no more; when swords shall be beaten into plough shares and spears into pruning hooks.

It is the hope of the Jew.

Not till He come will the Jew find his abiding place in Palestine. Not till He come will the solemn oath and covenant and promise of God to Abraham, Isaac and Jacob, be fulfilled.

And not till the Jew is in his place in Palestine can the world be at peace; not till the Jew is at home and one with God will the Gentile be ruled by God.

The Coming of the Lord is the hope of the Church.

Not till the Lord comes, girds the Church with His glory, fills her with His fullness, makes her like Himself, can she occupy the throne of power and associated rulership with Himself, and bring the world into the fellowship of God and truth.

Yea and Amen! the Coming of the Son of God a *SECOND* time is the "Blessed Hope" of the Church, the bloom, the beauty, and the fruition of all hopes.

Oh! if He do not come, it is the withering and the blight and the overthrow.

All Scripture goes down pell mell into the abyss of untruth and unreality, or, is whirled away like fallen leaves of a dying tree and scattered on the windy blast. And the cross of Christ looms against the fire smitten and lurid horizon, a crimson failure, an instrument of cruel agony whereon a man failed and went down to the yawning grave that waited for Him.

The failure of a Man!

Nay! the failure, the bankruptcy of the world; a grave into which all hope and faith fall dead and lie hopeless as a rotting corpse.

But the Word of God cannot fail. It is settled in the heavens forever more. Each utterance is filled with the breath of God and the speech and promise are of His very tongue.

He, the living God has said it—and it is true—Christ the Lord, His Son, is coming a *Second Time*.

He is coming as a man.

He is coming with the marks of the cross upon Him.

When I was a boy, there was a man in my town who used to move me with admiration, with childish wonder and, almost with adoration. He had been a soldier in the Mexican War. He had been wounded at Palo Alto. He bore the scars of that far away conflict; when I looked at those wounds they spoke to me of a heroism, a living loyalty, a life's outpaid tribute to the flag, that stirred my youthful pulses. But great and moving as were the wounds to me then, they were as nothing to what filled my vision in later days. It was in the hour of the great war between the North and the South, when the problem of the life or death of our nation was being solved on the battlefield. I lived through that struggle and in some small degree was a part of it. One day when the sound of cannon came on the wind I was halted with others on the side of the road that a convoy of the wounded might pass. They were loaded into great carts and wagons impressed from neighboring farms. And these wounded! they were young men, the flower and freshness of the land; and when I saw the bandaged heads and arms still reddened with their blood my heart melted within me, the tears leaped to my eyes. I saw in these men the radiance of that self sacrifice, that high and lofty concept which counts a flag and all its banners forth to be worth more than any single life; and these

wounds and blood stains were to me as the stigmata of unfaltering faith and abiding glory, the decorations and brevet of honor, of high attainment and of splendor, nor rank, nor pomp, nor wealth, nor crown of prince could give.

But what were these stigmata, these seals of honor and devotion on the part of those who had breasted death that a nation might be saved, what were these compared to the stigmata of Him who died for you and me good friend, that we might live and be with Him in after days the sons of God forever?

He is coming back with the marks of the nails and the spear wound He received for you and me.

And I shall see Him, see Him by the right of the purchase price paid in the blood of those very wounds. I shall take His hand; how can I endure the wonder, the glory, and the anguish even of the joy and reality of it? I shall put my fingers into the marks of the nails in His right hand. I shall do it as Thomas did, and yet not as Thomas did. I shall not do it to prove Him, to verify Him, but to thank Him; and I shall say, "It was for me." I shall put my finger into the wound of His left hand, and I shall say, "It was for me." I shall put my hand into His side where the spear point was sheathed in His breast, and where water and blood came forth from His broken heart, and I shall say, "It was for me;" and I shall fall down and kiss the nail marks in His feet and every full running tear of joy and praise shall say, "These were for me."

Yes, He is coming back with the stigmata of the cross.

He is coming back—not a phantom.

He is coming back a man, the man whom death could not kill; the man the grave could not keep; the man whom centuries could not wither and whom custom cannot stale; the man who is the Prince and the Giver of Life to men.

He is coming back the *Same Jesus*.

In spite of all His glory and splendor and infinite crowning, He is coming back the same Jesus who sat by the well side in Samaria, taught by the blue shores of Galilee, climbed the hills of Judea, and turned to music the discord in human hearts by the words He spake such as man never spake before, the words of tender compassion, infinite love and measureless grace.

He is coming as Bridegroom of the Church, as King of Israel, as David's Son, as King of kings, as the Restorer of the Earth, as its Recreator, as its Prince, its manifested and Eternal God. He will come *first* for the Church that she may share with Him the rapt beginning of His triumphant joys when He shall take to Himself His great power to reign and rule. Then with her He will come forth to begin the long and wondrous unfolding deeds that shall lift the earth once more into the orbit from whence it fell, into the full music of the spheres, to become no longer the footstool, but the throne of God and the center on which shall fall the gaze of a fascinated and adoring universe.

He is coming in a threefold glory.

He is coming in the glory of the *Father*.

He is coming as His Son and, therefore, not only as the Son of God, but God the Son; as the Word of that Father by whom He spake creation forth and by whom He uttered His mind and will.

He is coming in the glory of the *angels*.

The angels are the spirit men to whom winds and storm and forces of nature are the easy instruments of their constant service. He will come as their master and their Lord, at whose feet they shall pour the tributes of their power and own Him Lord and King.

He is coming in *His own glory*.

The glory of the Son who was born of a woman.

The glory of Him who was the Babe of Bethlehem.

The man of sorrows.

The atoning sacrifice.

The risen man, the immortal man, the infinite and eternal man. He who is both God and man forever.

And all the signs of the times indicate His coming is at hand.

The signs in the *Protestant Church*. Its worldliness, its covetousness, its love of pleasure, more than the love of God. Its unwillingness to endure sound doctrine, its itching ears, heaping to itself teachers and ready to be turned

by them from the truth of God to the fables of men.

The signs in the *Romish* Church, the already reaching forward to that hour when once more as the “Scarlet” woman she will for a season be feted and carried by the nations of the Roman Earth.

Signs in the *nations* themselves, the rush of multitudes, the roar of battle, the shouting of the captains, the conclave and deception of the kings, the getting ready for Armageddon.

Signs in the *social* world. The outbreaking of the people, the throwing down of old customs, the trampling under of old covenants, no master below, no master above.

Signs everywhere that the old order is changing, the new order coming; that new order which is disorder, disaster and unrest.

The coming of the Lord draweth nigh.

Is the church ready to welcome Him?

Do Christians want Him to come?

Are you as a Christian ready for Him? Are your accounts all correct? Have you drawn your contracts and drawn them with truth, the truth that has in it no reservation? Have you lived the whole truth or only a half truth? Do you know that a half truth is worse than a whole lie. Do you know that a half truth is *the paramour of a whole lie*?

Make no mistake Christian man, Christian woman, you must answer for your stewardship.

And if He should come for you today, how would you answer Him? If He should ask, “What have you done for Me today?” would you answer Him with joyful gladness and say, “I have done what my hand found to do, and done it with all my might for Thee.”

What He said to His disciples of old, He is saying now and saying it to each of you:

“Watch and be ready.”

And to you who are not saved! Let me warn you not to be living in a fool’s paradise. This world in which you are living is no holiday world, and it is no holiday answer you will be called to give for living here; no easy account to render for all the benefits He has bestowed upon you, and the grace in which He has dealt with you.

You must meet and answer to the living God. You must meet Him in the person of the cross rejected Son of God. He is coming back, not only to recompense those who own His cross as an altar of sacrifice whereon He died for men, He is coming back to avenge that cross, and charge it as a crime against all who do not own and confess His name.

You must meet Him either as an Avenger or a Redeemer, as Saviour or as Judge.

Let me beseech you to hear the sounds of warning that are coming down the gale, in the tumult and the storm, and the gathering blackness as it lowers on the rim of a startled and astonished world.

Turn to God’s Christ and now in this hour of His waiting and grace, claim redemption and the *saving shelter of His blood*—before too late.

II.

THE SECOND COMING OF CHRIST IN RELATION TO DOCTRINE, TO PROMISE, AND TO EXHORTATION

The Second Coming of Christ

In Relation to Doctrine, to Promise and to Exhortation

I DESIRE to preach to you the second sermon in the series on, "The Second Coming of our Lord Jesus Christ."

My theme a week ago was, "The Second Coming of Christ, the one event more often spoken of than any other in the Bible."

I affirmed, I demonstrated and I proved that in its narration, delineation and illustration, it was inwrought with the entire fabric, the construction and essential constitution of the whole Bible from Genesis to Revelation.

My theme tonight is, "The Second Coming of Christ, the one event, the one doctrine bound up with, and fulfilling, every fundamental doctrine, every sublime promise, every radiant hope, giving inspiration to every practical exhortation, and furnishing the basis of apostolic appeal to the highest type of Christian living."

My text may be found in Saint Paul's Second Epistle to the Thessalonians, second chapter and first verse:

"Now we beseech you, brethren, by the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ. . ."

There are those who preach and those who teach and multitudes of Christians and others who really believe that the doctrine of the Second Coming affords no warrant for appeal, either to the Church or the world; that it is a questionable doctrine, wholly unimportant, and without practical value; that its tendency is to unsettle those who preach it and all who believe it, leading them to speculation, to exalted imagination, and taking them away from the serious and sober side of responsible daily, Christian duty.

I am here tonight to affirm, to demonstrate and to prove that, so far from this excuseless concept and almost brutal misinterpretation being true, the truth is, the Second Coming of Christ is not only the one event more often spoken of than any other in the Bible, it is so woven into, is so absolutely a climactic necessity to Christian doctrine, exhortation and promise, that if you should take it out of the Bible, as some preachers have taken it out of their theology, Christianity as a system of divine revelation, and the Book as a record of it, would fall to the ground, be broken into fragments and swept away as the withered leaves are whirled by the autumn gale.

I affirm the Second Coming is bound up with the resurrection of the dead in Christ.

"The dead in Christ!"

What a far-flung phrase is that.

It bids us go back to the hour in time's beginning when the faith of men and women looked forward through the intervening ages to the Cross, the resurrection and the shining glory, saw the promises afar off, embraced them and died. Through the continuing centuries they died.

"The dead in Christ!"

They are everywhere, under monumental piles, storied urn and marble bust, sleeping in unmarked graves, in the lonely church-yard, beneath the moaning waves of the restless sea; those who have died by rack, by stake and torture; those who have fallen on the field of battle; those who have passed out through the gates of disease and pain; and others, who have gone as when the sun sets and the colors fade softly and quietly from the evening sky.

And they shall rise, *everyone in his own order*, in his own company.

Such an one as *Abel*, who first told the story of redeeming blood, and whose lamb to slaughter led, was a picture of Him who was the Crucified, and is now the glorified Lamb of God.

Enoch, who amid the slime and indescribable slush of antediluvian iniquity walked with God, and walked so intimately that God took him to Himself without dying. He shall not rise from the dead, but in the company of those who shall rise, he shall stand forth among the transfigured, changed and glorified.

Noah, a preacher of righteousness who for one hundred and twenty years testified of the way of salvation, in

the building of the ark condemned the world, and warned a mocking and gainsaying generation of the woe to come; Noah, who from within the security of the impervious ark, heard the rush and thunder of the mighty flood, and in every crash of it heard the accents of the Son of God saying that as it was in the days of Noah so should it be when the Son of Man should come; Noah who, on the hither side of the flood died in the faith of Christ.

These shall rise in their own particular company.

The Patriarchs shall rise a separate and wondrous company.

Abraham, who kept the flame of faith and devotion burning on the altar of the home.

Isaac, who yielded to his father's uplifted knife in the full confidence that, though he died, God would raise him from the dead.

Jacob, who when Pharaoh said to him, "How old art thou?" answered, ". . . The days of the years of my pilgrimage are an hundred and thirty years; few and evil have the days of the years of my life been. . .;" (Gen. 47:9) *Jacob*, who when the night of death came down, turned his face to the east, caught a gleam of the coming and eternal morn and with prophetic vision foretold that the sceptre should not depart from Judah, nor a law giver from between his feet till Shiloh should come; *Jacob* the memorial witness to the grace of God.

Joseph, the one man in Holy Scripture against whom no charge of sin is made; *Joseph*, who when he was dying told them to wrap him up as a mummy is wrapped, put him in an Egyptian coffin, carry him up to Palestine the Promised Land, and place him in the cave of Machpelah.

These shall rise and shine in their own particular company.

Such an one as *Moses* shall rise. *Moses*, who stood on Sinai's height as it shook and trembled; and who, amid the crash of thunders and the play of lightnings, waited while the finger of the living God wrote the ten commandments on their tables of "unquarried" stone; *Moses*, who hidden in the cleft of the rock as the glory of the Lord passed by, beheld what that Lord should be in after days when, as *incarnate* God He should walk amid the sons of men; *Moses*, who yonder on the bald and barren top of Nebo, beneath its cloudless sky, at God's command laid down to die; and whose incorrupted body was buried by the hand of God; *Moses*, who fifteen hundred years after in that body preserved from corruption as the perfect type of the body of his Lord, appeared with Him upon the Mount of Transfiguration and spake of the decease which He should accomplish at Jerusalem; *Moses*, who shall revisit the earth and die once more.

Aaron, the brother of *Moses*, and his priestly sons.

Joshua, the captain of the Lord's host who led them through the divided waters of the swelling Jordan.

These and those associated with them, men and women of the unfaltering faith, whose spiritual eyes caught visions of the sacrificial cross, these shall rise together in their band.

The prophets will rise in their own company.

Isaiah, who wrote the fifty-third chapter, that chapter in which you see the lamb dumb before her shearers; in which you see the cross and the thieves on either side, the rich man's tomb, the resurrection and the triumph over death and the grave; that fifty-third chapter from which Philip, the evangelist, preached the Gospel to the wayfaring eunuch as he went from Jerusalem to Gaza down, and ". . . began at the same scripture, and preached unto him Jesus." (Acts 8:35)

Jeremiah, the weeping prophet who, with his face washed in tears, looked forward to the woe of Jerusalem when the holy city should be trampled under foot.

Ezekiel, who by the river Chebar saw visions of God, and one like unto the Son of Man enthroned, high and lifted up above the glory.

Daniel, who under the impulse of the Spirit of God looked down the coming ages and saw twenty-five hundred years of unrolling human history. He saw Cyrus at the head of his Persian followers, saw him open the two leaved gates of Babylon and overthrow the golden city. He saw Alexander arise from the midst of the Macedonian hills and with his brazen Greeks sweep eastward across the Granicus, beyond Arbela to the Indus and the Oxus, turn back to Babylon and die in the welter of a drunken debauch as the hand of God fell smashingly upon his far extended empire, breaking it into its four great and prophetic fragments. He looked on and saw Rome rise like a mighty colossus from the side of the yellow Tiber and stand with one foot on Europe and another on Asia. And his gaze has come on down to the surge of this red war, and beyond it to the rise of the ten democratic kings and the last Kaiser

who with his armies shall find their fateful overthrow beneath the walls of Jerusalem and in that "valley of decision," (Joel 3:14) which is Jehoshaphat.

There is *Hosea* who writing centuries ago foretold the very state of the Jews today, and *Amos*, and *Joel*, who tells of the gathering of the Gentile nations and the beating of ploughshares into swords and pruning hooks into spears before it is possible that the swords shall be beaten back into ploughshares and the spears into pruning hooks; all the minor prophets to *Malachi* the closing pages of whose prophecy is bathed in the golden light of that sun of righteousness who shall arise with healing in His wings.

These shall rise together, the company of the "...holy men of God..." (1 Pet. 1:21) who spake as they were carried along by the Holy Spirit, and whose words are the outbreathed words of God.

In one of the great libraries of this country, in a building of noble architecture and sober, decorative beauty, an American artist has wrought around the hall a frieze in which the involution and genius of it consist in the rugged and gothic like, solemn and all warning figures of these prophets, a wondrous frieze, speaking to Americans of the need of righteousness and truth; but in the morning of the resurrection these prophets, risen and living in glorified bodies, shall stand forth the shining, scintillating and quickened frieze of human immortality, giving emphasis and splendor to the redeemed of God who with them shall constitute His wondrous and living temple.

Among the risen and glorified throng shall be seen such an one as *John the Baptist* who dared to tell a debauched Herod he had no right to his brother's wife; that John the Baptist who was put to death because the wanton woman whom he had rebuked sent her half-naked and lawless daughter to dance before the king and so appeal to his lust that at her request (and inspired by her mother) he gave her the Baptist's head in a charger; John, of whom none born of woman has ever been greater, shall rise and confront the murderous king and this dancing girl as together, they two, shall pass across the threshold of a final and deserved hell. John shall rise in the benediction of the First Resurrection and with him all who like him waited for the Messiah and prepared His way.

Then amid the resurrection host shall be seen that mystic Body, that elect and covenant Bride, the Church.

In that Church there will be distinct and separate companies.

There shall stand forth the blessed company of the Holy Apostles. *Peter*, who drew forth his sword to defend the Lord, then denied Him with oaths and cursings, went out into the black night with broken heart, bitterness of remorse and tears of repentance; Peter, who at the close of after days given in full surrender to the Master's name refused, when they came to crucify him, to be crucified like his Lord, but demanded they should nail him to the cross head downward and let him die like that.

James, who though he stood for law and much of Judaism, has given, under God, and by his inspiration, the clearest vision of this age and dispensation of the "taking out."

John, who leaned upon the Master's breast at supper and heard the inmost beating of His heart; John, who dwelt at last in Patmos for his Saviour's sake, saw His glory above the brightness of the noonday sun, heard His voice as the sound of many waters; at His dictation wrote the amazing seven letters to the seven churches, and the twenty-two chapters of that book of Revelation which like the ceiling of a Sistine chapel gives the solemn frescoes and the sculptured outlines of the Consummation hour.

And last of all, that "Called" Apostle *Paul* whom the Lord met on the road to Damascus, blinded for a moment with His glory, then transformed him into his "bond slave" forever; through whom He sent fourteen epistles of the New Testament to the Church of Christ; that Paul whose one device is bannered forth in his far exultant cry, "For to me to live is Christ, and to die is gain." (Philip. 1:21)

This company of Apostles shall rise together. And along with them, the fathers of the Church, the mention of whose names recalls their genius, faith and consecration to the cross.

Company after company will rise of saints and martyrs; men and women who did not count their lives dear unto them that they might proclaim the story of redeeming love and grace and seal their faith with generous blood; multitudes whose names have never been known; each shall rise in his or her own order; and as the stars differ one from another in glory so shall also these.

And they shall arise in the bodies in which they died, the same, and yet, not the same; for, in the body of the believer there is inwrought at regeneration the basis of a new, yet old, body.

Do with the dead body of the genuine Christian what you may, that nucleus of the new one, like the heart of a

planted seed, will be held by the Holy Ghost in union with the body of the risen Lord, and will wait the hour of germination, the resurrection hour when, at the sound of His voice who is the Resurrection and the Life, it will bloom and burst forth to be the dwelling place, the unfading garment of the disembodied Christian soul; a body of glory, shining brighter than any star of night or sun of day; a body of power and no longer of weakness; a pneumatic, and no longer a soulical, body; a body that shall be, not the beastly minister to the soul, but the flashing instrument of the spirit.

This is the First Resurrection.

And that word, “resurrection,” rang across Asia and Europe like the sound of silver trumpets; with the far echo of the sound there came a light as when the dawn breaks over a long and starless night.

To know the sudden awakening, the marvellous effect produced by the utterance of that word, you need to look at the world of that hour.

Look at Rome!

What a Rome it was, with the golden house of Nero, the piled up palaces of the Palatine, the Forum crowded with basilicas, with arch and column.

Look down the Appian way as it stretches to Ostia and the sea. Receding right and left as far as the eye can reach the undulating Campagna, filled with cypress tree and garden, and red-roofed villas and far away vineyards where the swelling grapes purpled in the sun of slanting hills; and rising up and bordering this unique and inimitable roadway, temple like tombs and monuments and marble bastions. Draw near and read the sculptured epitaphs, each letter like a frozen tear congealed in the heart of despair as the living bid good-bye to the dead, and in the stony speech of their own dead hopes, bid them good-bye forever.

Over those tombs, those milestones of the dead, there breaks no single ray of hope.

Then, suddenly, everywhere, men went forth proclaiming the resurrection of a man who had triumphed over death and the grave, and the assured resurrection of all who confessed their faith upon Him. He had risen, He would cause them to rise and live again.

Death took on a new meaning. Men went forth to die; but no longer entered it as stoics pass to hopeless doom, they approached it with joyous smile and entered it as conquerors pass beneath triumphal arch and scattered wreaths. A new name was given to the place of burial. It was no longer the spot where life went down to corruption, to dust and silence forever; on the contrary, these graveyards became “cemeteries,” “sleeping places.” Here the body was laid away in the name of Him who is the victor over death, laid away to sleep, until the morning voice should bid them wake.

And when, think you, shall this resurrection take place?

I answer you—

At the SECOND COMING of our Lord Jesus Christ.

As it is written:

“For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive. But *every man in his own order*: Christ the firstfruits; afterward they that are Christ’s at *His coming*. . . For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first: . . . for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible. . .” (I Cor. 15:22,23; I Thess. 4:16; I Cor. 15:52).

Hark! “If a man die, shall he live again?” Who is asking that? It is Job, asking it out of the long, long ago. (Job 14:14)

Let us answer him.

“Yes, Job, the dead in Christ shall rise and live again. They shall rise, and live and be immortal when our Lord Jesus Christ shall come *a second time*.”

Take away the *Second Coming*, spiritualize it, take it out of the preaching, repudiate it, say Paul and all who taught it were mistaken.

What then?

I answer, apart from the Second Coming of Christ you have not a single fragment of Scripture which, under legitimate exegesis, warrants you even to expect the resurrection.

Without the Second Coming of Christ there never will be a resurrection of the dead in Christ.

If you deny the Second Coming of Christ, then go to the graves of those you loved, embalmed in your tears and laid away in hope, and write over them the words, "never-more."

If our Lord Jesus Christ does not come a Second time every Christian who dies will remain a disembodied ghost forever.

And yet there are would-be wise and advanced teachers who talk about the unimportance of the Second Coming.

Nay! The Second Coming is so important, so vital to faith and hope, that it is bound up with, inwrought with the whole principle and promise of the resurrection of the Christian dead, the dead in Christ.

It is bound up with the doctrine and promise of the transfiguration of the living.

It is written, that by one man sin entered the world and death by sin, and that death has passed upon all men; and that it is appointed unto men once to die.

From the beginning the scythe of death has swung an unhindered swath. It has spared neither rank nor sex, nor age; king and cotter, prince and peasant, high and low, young and old, have fallen before it like ripened grain before the reaper's blade.

Those of us who have passed the meridian of life have seen them go, great figures on the horizon of time; we have seen friends and relatives fall before the unhesitating blow. We who are alive begin to look at the gray hairs swiftly and surely coming amid the black or brown, at the wrinkles multiplying on face, on neck and hands. We wonder why we cannot walk so far today, or do so much, or so quickly in a day as we used to do. The fact is, death is approaching us, even while we talk of life and years and plans. Because death cannot be ignored; because there is but a step betwixt us and that sudden snapping of the chord, that instant breaking of the pitcher at the well, business, contracts, marriage, are made in view of death; and because of its all-pervading presence and demand, men everywhere say (and it is a phrase common to all language), "*one thing is certain, and that is, death.*"

And yet, men and women, hear me!

The one thing that is absolutely uncertain is death.

Nothing in all the world is so uncertain as death—to *the Christian*. It is uncertain because it is absolutely sure and certain there will be a generation of Christians on the earth *who will never die*.

They will be going about their daily avocations. Some will be carrying burdens, stabbing themselves with the sharp daggers of perplexity; some will be standing at the cross-roads of hesitation, not knowing whether to turn to the right or the left, and the night and darkness coming down. Some will be old and some will be young. Some will be languishing on beds of pain, and some may be entering into the shadow of death; when, suddenly, each shall feel a thrill, a quiver, a throb of ecstasy and delight, a sense of freedom and splendid power; the dim eyes will see, the feeble knees will become strong, the nervous, trembling hands will become fresh and young. Youth, like an elixir, will run through every fibre, each Christian shall shine, and each shall see the other shine in immortal beauty. They shall stand changed, transfigured, glorified; Christians who shall never be measured for a shroud, and for whose bodies the graves shall never yawn.

And when is this to be?

I answer, *At the Second Coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.*

As it is written:

"... We shall not all sleep (we shall not all die), but we shall all be changed, in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound. . . and we shall be changed (transformed) for this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality." (I Cor. 15:51-53)

IMMORTALITY.

What a word is that! How men have dreamed of it, and sung of it, and written of it, and sighed and turned their faces to the wall and given it up.

Years ago I stood before the Rostra in the Forum and tried to recall the hour when Cicero, yonder on the Velian hill perhaps, talked of immortality, read the *Phaedo* and sighingly said: "Plato thou reasonest well, but—"

And that was all.

And all the speech and all the writing, and all the rhetoric, and all the philosophizing today, leaves man standing at the edge of the grave without any answer that does not make it a guess, forcing from his lips the bitter soliloquy, "To be or not to be—*that is the question?*"

But, listen to the proclamation that the Son of God is coming a *Second* time, and that His shout will ring down the heavens and raise the dead, and then, it is written:

"Then *we which are alive and remain* shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord." (I Thess. 4:17)

The dead raised, *the living changed at the Second Coming*; and this might be any moment, any hour, "*when ye think not.*" (Luke 12:40)

And yet, there are men standing in the pulpit with an open Bible and the very promise and assurance of God leaping to their vision, who actually dare to say to the hungry souls before them that the *Second Coming* of Christ is an unimportant doctrine, a questionable event.

The Second Coming of our Lord Jesus Christ is not only bound up with the doctrine of the resurrection of the dead in Christ and the certainty of a non-dying and gloriously transfigured generation of Christians, it is bound up with the doctrine of sonship with God and likeness to Christ.

Sonship with God is not a natural prerogative. All men are not sons of God. God is not the Father of all men. He is the Creator of all men, but Father only of those who believe in His Son; as it is written:

"For ye are all the children of God by faith in Christ Jesus." (Gal. 3:26)

The moment an individual believes in our Lord Jesus Christ; the moment he offers Him by faith as his sin-offering, his sacrifice for sin and his personal substitute, that moment God the Father accepts the death of Christ on the cross as though the believer had been executed and done to death there. He transfers the obedience of Christ to the benefit of the believer, He accepts Christ risen from the dead as his representative, as his righteousness; so that it is written, "For he hath made him to be sin for us, who knew no sin; that we might be made the *righteousness of God in him.*" (II Cor. 5:21) Then Christ the risen Lord as the *Second Man*, as the new head of the race, communicates His own perfect life to the believer and gives him the Holy Spirit to dwell in him as the seal of redemption, the guarantee of salvation, and the pledge of immortality. The believer is then linked up to the body and life of the Lord. He becomes so identified with Him that it is said, he is "*joined* unto the Lord," and that he is "*one spirit*" with Him (I Cor. 6:17), of His very essence. He becomes a son of God, not only by sacrificial and legal relations but by actual union with the Father through the Son.

But, while as believers, we receive a new life, a new spiritual nature, and exalted, heavenly desires, the old nature remains in us. It never changes. You may starve a tiger, so starve him that you can keep him under. Give him a taste of blood and he will turn on you for more. This old nature is the flesh, and will be flesh to the end of the age. It is our privilege to starve it and keep it under by means of the new nature; for, while we have two natures as Christians, we have but one responsibility, and one responsibility because we remain but one personality. Again and again we fail to exercise that responsibility, gratify the demand of the old nature, and falling under its claims do not live in nor reveal the divine life that is ours by spiritual birthright. The world which never reads the Bible but reads us as living epistles takes note of our failures and registers them against the profession we make as sons of God; but even when a Christian lives on the highest plane and seems to fulfill every requirement of the profession he makes, even then the world, while admitting his moral value, cannot see that essentially he is any different from others who make no such profession. They do not believe he has any distinct nature, or is any more entitled to be called a son of God. The truth is, we are kings and princes in disguise. The world does not know us; as it is written: "*. . . the world knoweth us not. . .*" (I John 3:1). But our sonship shall be made manifest and our likeness unto Christ revealed when He Himself shall come a *SECOND* time.

Once Peter the Great, so it is said, after a day's work as a common laborer in the shipyard (but his identity unknown) stood with a group of fellow-laborers not far from where the Imperial Guards were changed. The men were full of talk and grew quite bitter in their denunciation of the government, and the condition of the times; as the group increased the matter for a moment looked moblike and threatening. Just then the sound of a trumpet was heard with its vibrant note quavering upon the frosty air. In a moment Peter loosed and flung back his workman's blouse and revealed beneath it the uniform of the Guard, blazing with the insignia of royalty. There was

silence in the crowd, then with one accord they fell at his feet to own their Czar. Our Lord is coming, the trumpet will sound, and the fleshly garment that doth disguise us will be flung aside and we shall stand forth in all the beauty and all the glory of our imperial sonship.

Many years ago when preaching in the country-side, some one gave me a half-dozen poplar sticks with huge lumps of dried mud on the ends, telling me to keep them in my study; that some day those mud lumps would open and I would be surprised. I placed them in a long neck jar and forgot them. Some weeks later when returning to my study after a day spent in pastoral visitation, I noticed the sticks were disarranged, some had fallen on the table, all were cracked and pieces of dried clay lay on the floor. I wondered who had been disturbing things when a whirring sound made me look up, and floating gracefully here and there against the walls were six of the largest and finest red-bodied moths I had ever seen. They had been shut up as chrysalids within these muddy cases, and in the fullness of their time had broken forth and soared into a realm of light and air. Like them, we too, the dead and the living shall break forth from this muddy vesture of mortality which doth encumber us, soar into the realm of light and air to meet a descending Lord and be like Him.

It is written, “. . .we shall be like him; for we shall see him as he is.” (1 John 3:2)

As the dawn breaks through the night and paints the lifted mountain peak with roseate hue, fills the valley with its waves of light, turns river, rivulet and stream to silver and pours forth its illumination, until each tree and branch and stone and blade of grass stands forth as though it had been etched in fire and flame by artist needle; so, at the sight of Him, each child of God will be transfigured, clothed upon with heavenly beauty, and made like unto Him.

And this apocalypse of personal splendor, let it be remembered, is at the *SECOND COMING* of our Lord.

The Second Coming of our Lord Jesus Christ is bound up with the doctrine and the promise of rewards.

As believers we are saved without good works of any sort; but saved that we may do good works of every sort. We do nothing to be saved, that we may do something after we are saved. We are not only called to faith but service in His name. The Christian who says he believes and then sits down and is a spiritual do-nothing is a pitiful puzzle to the angels of God and a source of mockery and rejoicing to the demons of the pit; and the time is coming when as believers we shall have to render an account to the Lord for the gifts He has bestowed upon us, for the opportunities He has placed before us, and for the devotion or the lack of it which may have been the character of our days. No matter how small the service if it has been rendered in His name to the full of our ability and opportunity, we shall receive a reward.

But when are the rewards to be given?

They are not to be given at death, when the departing believer enters Heaven.

Not a single saint of God has yet been rewarded.

Paul has not received his reward.

Listen to what he says:

“I have fought a good fight, I have finished my course, I have kept the faith: henceforth there is laid up for me a crown of righteousness, which the Lord, the righteous judge, shall give me at that day: . . .” (II Tim. 4:7,8)

And what is that day?

When the Lord comes a *SECOND* time; as it is written:

“For the Son of man shall come in the glory of his Father with his angels; and *then* he shall reward every man according to his works.” (Matt. 16:27)

And again it is written:

“And, behold, I come quickly; and my reward is with me, to give every man according as his work shall be.” (Rev. 22:12)

If you have only given a cup of cold water in His name, or given the glad hand for His sake that you might lift some soul out of the deep and guide his feet into the way of life, you will not be forgotten; you will get your reward when the Lord comes.

But mark this! The Lord is so interested in His own coming, He is waiting for it with such patience, such hope, and such profound interest, that His attention is specially drawn to those who love the thought of it, and wish Him

to come; so much do those who love the SECOND COMING appeal to the Lord that in the day when He is revealed He will give a special crown to those who love it, have been devoted to it, and stood forth to proclaim it; as it is written:

“. . . and not to me only (that is, not to Paul only will a crown of righteousness be given), but unto all them also that love his appearing.” (II Tim. 4:8)

If you wish a crown of righteousness let your heart go out in love and devotion and earnest delight at the thought of His SECOND COMING.

The Second Coming of our Lord Jesus Christ is bound up with the promise of satisfaction.

Satisfied!

Who in this world has ever been satisfied? Go back to that far time when Solomon was king.

He had wealth such as no king before nor since; gold and silver poured into his coffers like waters from exhaustless mountain springs. He built palaces and temples. He had stables with thousands of horses. He had chariots. He made parks and lakes and water courses. He planted gardens and orchards. He had pools and ponds for fish of all sorts. He gathered musicians and instruments of music. He had men servants and maid servants born in his house. His table was loaded and groaning with luxuries. He was clothed in robes woven on Tyrian looms. He gave himself up to art, to literature. He had more wisdom and knowledge than any man who ever lived before or since. He gave himself up to every desire of his heart. He refrained his hand from nothing his heart desired. He became an epicure, a gourmand, a materialist, a confirmed sensualist. He had a harem of seven hundred women, wives, concubines and mistresses. He drank of every fountain. He tasted of every joy.

His glory was so great, the Queen of Sheba who came from the uttermost part of the earth to see him, said the half had not been told; and after he had tasted every spring of human pleasure, drained every cup to the dregs and passed through every experience wealth and absolute power could give, he cried out that all was vanity of vanities, and there was 'no profit in anything under the sun.

Satisfied! None has ever been satisfied. Not Midas, turning to gold all things he touched; not Croesus, burning on his funeral pyre of heaped up and useless wealth.

Satisfied! Not the beggar at the gate; not the decent poverty that painfully seeks to make ends meet; not the man whose desires find no financial barrier. Go under the lustre of the rich man's chandeliers, sink your feet in the yielding softness of his easy carpets, walk through his galleries of priceless paintings, admire his garnered *bibelots* from every land, let him tell with pride of his poor beginnings and the plans his ambition and wealth make possible; and in an unguarded moment you will hear him sigh and know there is yet some one, and lacking, thing, that keeps him from being satisfied.

Satisfied! O no, men are not satisfied. They are tossed and restless, and the chief desire of their hearts, the one thing, whatever it may be which they imagine will make them satisfied, like the will o' the wisp, flies ever before and eludes them.

But hark!

I hear a voice coming across the ages.

“. . . I shall be satisfied, when I awake, with thy likeness.” (Ps. 17:15)

What is that? It is the sound of a harp and the refrain of a song. It is David the king and he sings and he says, he shall be satisfied, satisfied when he awakes in the likeness of the Lord.

He and all the dead in Christ shall awake at the SECOND COMING of our Lord Jesus Christ.

Yes, my soul! that is the hour of satisfaction; that is the one event that will not disappoint—THE SECOND COMING OF CHRIST.

And when He comes we shall fall at His feet and confess the half has never been told us.

In any hour of sorrow or trial or burden and great unreachd desire, remember, you shall be satisfied and fully satisfied when Jesus Comes. Your perfect satisfaction shall greet you at His SECOND COMING.

The Second Coming of our Lord Jesus Christ is bound up with the doctrine of the recognition of the dead.

There is one question which rises involuntarily to the lips of those who are bereaved of their loved ones. They

ask:

“Shall we see and know them again? In the great hereafter shall we meet and joyfully greet each other?”

And this question is asked because death is a great awakener and a great revealer. When some one with whom we have been living is suddenly taken from us we realize we have not appreciated them as we should; that we have been almost brutal with them at times, not in word or deed, but in the lack of that warmth, that sincere recognition, we should have given them; and we feel we would they might be given to us again that we might repair the sad mistakes, and that we might try over again and make the relationship of life to life all it should have been.

Some years ago at the close of one of my meetings a man of about forty or thereabout approached me, and I saw by his manner that he was greatly moved. With a sort of hesitating and yet earnest manner he said:

“Do you think we shall know each other in Heaven?”

He saw my look of inquiry. Then he told me he was the youngest of three boys. The family lived in the New England hills on a small and scrubby farm. The father died. The mother and the two boys endeavored to carry on the home. This youngest son had been of a hasty and passionate temper. He was quick to speak, saying often rash and regrettable things, but just as quickly and sincerely sorry for them. His mother was devoted to him, and in spite of his unconscious tendency to a lawless spirit, loved his mother. He went away from home. He married, had a family, was successful. Twice a year perhaps, once always, he would visit the old homestead, while the mother, growing old, still lived with the eldest son. She had recently died—and looking at me, this one-time boy and now grown and successful man, said, with a tremor in his voice he could not conceal:

“Mother died some weeks ago. I went back to the old hills to see her laid away side by side with my father in the village church-yard; and Doctor Haldeman,” he said, “when I stood in the narrow little parlor with its faded paper on the walls, and looked down at the thin, worn face and the white hair, all my boyhood days came back to me, and I saw my mother as I never saw her before. I saw how often she had just waited for some word from me that might have told her how I really loved her and appreciated her; and Doctor,” he said, and the man moved me to the core as he said it, “Doctor, I’d give ten thousand dollars if I could have that little old mother back again for ten minutes that I might just tell her all that is in my heart about her now. Do you think I’ll—I’ll have that chance, Doctor?”

And I tell you what I told him, that if you sincerely believe in the Son of God as your Redeemer and Lord, you will meet and know the Christian dead who have gone beyond you.

Listen to the word of comfort that comes singing to your soul from the lips of an inspired apostle:

“...then shall I know even as also I am known.” (I Cor. 13:12)

And that *“then”* shall be when He comes a SECOND time: when we shall see Him as He is; for, it is written that He, Himself, shall descend from heaven. He will raise the dead, transfigure the living and both shall be caught up together to meet Him in the air; and so shall we ever be with the Lord; and because of this the apostle bids us not to sorrow over our dead even as others which *have no hope*; and to comfort one another with the assurance that at the Lord’s Coming we shall be together again.

It must be plain to you and the simplest or most callous mind that should the Lord come and we not know each other the exhortation to comfort one another with the thought of the risen dead and the transfigured living meeting together in His presence would be an exhortation of meaningless and useless words distilling for us, not the essence of comfort, but of bitterness and disappointed longing.

Nay, there shall be no disappointment. We shall know even as we are known, and that when our Lord comes the SECOND time.

Resurrection from the dead, transfiguration of the living, the manifestation of sonship with God, likeness to Christ, rewards of faith and service, the satisfied soul, recognition and cognition of the dead, are all bound up with, and dependent for their fulfilment on, the Coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.

And yet men in the face of all this have the hardihood to say it is an unimportant doctrine; and that it is an unsettling and disturbing theme to preach.

What shall be said of those, whether in pulpit or pew, who have either the boldness or the ignorance to utter such things?

Not only is the Second Coming of Christ bound up with every fundamental doctrine, it is equally bound up with

every sublime promise.

It is bound up with the promise of victory over the devil.

God never created a devil.

He created an angel of the rank of cherubim and their head, beautiful, full of wisdom, might and power. However, he was carried away with the contemplation of himself, saw in himself limitless possibilities of rulership and glory, was unwilling to subordinate his immense personality to that of another, revolted against the all-enclosing impact of the divine presence, determined to break through, make his own selfhood the sufficient and all-pervading environment, rebelled against God.

We read that the LORD created the world in which we live in six days, resting on the seventh, laying down the pattern for man. On the sixth day the pinnacle of His creation on the earth was created—man. To man was given the dominion over the whole earth, and to walk in fellowship and divine partnership with God in the earth.

Satan led man to turn his back upon the offered partnership with God, and enter into partnership with himself. In this Satan became the master and man the dupe and slave. He has led man into idolatry, into all false religions, into war and rapine, murder and lust. He has invented false philosophies, and transforming himself into an angel of light, has sent forth his ministers as ministers of righteousness, but a righteousness which denies the blood.

He is the adversary of God and man.

No sooner do you seek the path of righteousness, of spirituality, and truth than you find him flinging his barricades across the way, or thrusting out the hand that will misguide and lead astray. He is every where and in all things opposed to God, and the adversary of whatsoever may turn the thoughts of men to God.

Go, attend your evening prayer-meeting. At its close go down the brightly illuminated street. Everywhere red lips, white hands, jewelled fingers, lives full of passion, the glare, the glitter, the clink of glass, the sparkle of wine, the careless laughter, the insidious speech, the wide-flung doors of amusement, the offered pleasures of sin, at every turn the invitation to gratify, to cultivate the flesh, to excite the blood, to stir the animal, to set on fire the veins, to appeal to ambition, to pride, to envy, to disregard all restraint and—to forget God.

Talk about converting the world by the Gospel, changing, moulding, making over all this steaming, sweating, seething mass of unspiritual flesh and palpitating sensualism, making it over into cool, clean unfevered spirituality! Talk about the Church, by the doors of whose darkened buildings the crowd is surging; talk about the Church overthrowing the devil and bringing in the reign of abiding purity, chastity and devotion to the things of God!

Let the carnival of the devil, this grip of Satan on the bodies, on the unloosed animalism of man, his directing and compelling inspiration for the mad service he invites warn you against the folly of any such concept.

Nor is he simply the smiling fiend behind the gay and mocking crowd, but in the name of science, free thought, progressive ideas and liberal spirit; in the name of culture and charity and the betterment of human life every day leading men away from the written Word of God, away from the light that shines from an open grave, shutting out from men the vision of a risen and a loving Christ who is alone the God to be revealed to men.

Without effort every day he seems to win and the crowd like dumb driven cattle follow in the way.

He seems to win, and God again and again seems far off, and faith faints, and hope seems wingless.

Is it always to be so?

No! Thank God. No. The devil is to be overthrown and bound and wholly vanquished at the last. The long descending career from the cherubic glory will reach its nadir, the end will come. God and Christ and righteousness will win.

But how and when?

Again I answer you—at the SECOND Coming of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ.

It will be at that hour and under those circumstances so tremendously painted by the Holy Spirit in the nineteenth chapter of the Revelation; in that hour when He shall come forth followed by the armies of heaven, riding on the steeds of judgment. Then shall He lay hold on Satan, bind him, cast him into the pit and shut him up for a thousand years. From thence shall he be transferred finally to that cage whose every bar is a flame of fire; and where forever he shall be tormented as the result of that consciousness which sought to eliminate from itself the will and way of God. Forever as a prisoner of state, he shall be the eternal witness that he who seeks to exalt

himself shall be cast down; from the depths of his awful misery he shall bear witness to the exaltation of that Christ who, although from unbegun eternity clothed with the form and appearing of God and from everlasting His visibility and word of utterance, did not, Satan-like, grasp at and hold on to that equality, but for the sake of us men and our redemption, and for the display of divine and infinite grace was willing to lay it aside, put off the robe of His splendor, and clothe Himself with the limitation, the poverty and humiliation of our humanity.

Victory for God and overthrow of the devil is certified at the SECOND COMING of our Lord Jesus Christ.

The Second Coming of our Lord Jesus Christ is bound up with the promise that creation shall be delivered from the bondage of corruption.

When man sinned and fell from his exalted plane, God put a ban, a curse and limitation on the earth. He said it should be checked on the side of its fruitfulness in fruitful seeds: but that it should bring forth the hindering and sterilizing thorns and thistles.

And God has kept His Word and held the ban.

Go into that field, subsoil it deeply with your modern plough; then plant it well with best of seeds; and lo, weeds and thorns shall spring up to choke and keep them down. Plant a garden, and unless with tireless vigil you watch both night and day, root out and overturn with merciless stroke of hoe and spade the multiplying thorns and creeping, worthless vines, they will so grow, invade and insist their rights upon the elect and chosen ground, that almost before you are aware of it, they will, like lustful villains and brutal robbers, be strangling and robbing the honest plants of life and fruitful gain.

Everywhere it is so. You must sweat and toil and labor on to bring forth your harvest; but, you need never turn a hand's breadth to help the weeds and thorns and worthless multiplying things; leave them alone, ignore them, let wind and rain and storm, the wind and rain and storm that devastate and ruin your blooming flowers and precious growths, let them alone, and they will grow and thrive and riot in a perfect debauch of rank increase, running over stoniest and most repelling ground to show their strength, reach out and spoil all not of their kind.

To poisonous weeds and evil things there is no apparent limit, no needed care to make them bloom; but always and everywhere and in all things there is limitation and hindrance when you seek to expand and make more fruitful that which is good.

There is limitation in the earth. There is a ban upon it, sterile wastes, barren deserts and resisting rocks.

Because of this limitation and hindrances human life is a struggle; a struggle which begins at birth and manifests itself in the very hour and article of death.

Everywhere under this ban and curse of thorn and thistle and the iron bond of hindered good, there is corruption and the helpless bondage of it. Everywhere there is the disintegration, the moaning and the lamentation; everywhere there is, as the apostle calls it, "...the sufferings of this *present* time. . ." (Rom. 8:18).

That the earth is capable of a million fold greater yield of bounty is demonstrated every day as science slowly applies its increasing knowledge, and here and there lays hold of some hitherto unknown and operating force; but no matter in what direction the push, always there is the interfering force and hindrance.

That man is capable, has in him mentally, assets of power for greater things, is demonstrated not only by the things he does, but by the things he attempts to do and cannot.

But this ban is to be taken off. This imposed curse is to be removed. The earth is to be loosened from her gyves. She is to bound forward as a fruitful mother and from her quivering bosom bring forth in such abundance that the very desert shall blossom as the rose.

It will only be necessary to touch the earth and waters will spring forth from the wilderness, fruit from the naked bough. Famine and hunger, weariness and the sweat of toiling men shall come to an end. Pain and disease shall depart. Sorrow shall cease to brew its tears. The inhabitants of the land shall no more say, "I am sick."

And the earth, creation itself, we are told, is on the tiptoe of expectation waiting for this promised deliverance.

And when shall it come?

Neither the genius, the science, nor the increasing knowledge of man can bring it about.

It is to be brought about at the "... manifestation of the sons of God;" (Rom. 8:19) for, as it is literally written:

"The creation is on the tiptoe of expectation waiting for the manifestation of the sons of God. . .the creation

itself shall be delivered from the bondage of corruption into the liberty of the glory of the sons of God."

And when shall the sons of God be manifested so that their manifestation shall be the signal for the loosening of creation's bond and bondage?

The answer is, and should be self evident, at the SECOND COMING of our Lord Jesus Christ; as it is written:

"When Christ, who is our life, shall appear, then shall ye also appear with him in glory." (Col. 3:4)

Not only is the Second Coming of our Lord Jesus Christ bound up with every fundamental doctrine and sublime promise, it is, also, bound up with every practical exhortation to Christian obligation, service and character.

It is bound up with the exhortation to meet together on the Lord's Day.

The apostle exhorts believers not to forsake the assembling of themselves together, "as the manner," he says of some is. (See Heb. 10:25)

It was the manner of some in the apostle's day. Absenteeism had begun in the apostolic Church. It is a widespread contagion today. There are said to be a million Protestants in this city who rarely, if ever, attend church. Multitudes of professed Christians remain in bed on Lord's Day morning; or, spend the forenoon reading the Sunday newspapers; in the afternoon go out on the plea of health and recreation to play golf or drive in automobile; or, taking time off of God turn the day which is the Lord's and not theirs into a day of visitation, family reunion or social pleasures. It is a holiday, no longer what the word originally meant, a "holy day."

Some of the reasons Christians give for staying home or away from church on "Sunday" are so amazing, that the insincerity and folly of them are openly manifest, even to those who half shamefacedly make them.

So marked has become this deterioration in respect to the Lord's Day and the house of God, that a "go to church" campaign has been inaugurated, even, by the daily papers. Some of the reasons suggested why people should go to church are fairly good, others grotesque. Many, if not most of them are written by persons who are "religious" rather than spiritual. The Christian who goes to church conscientiously, even though he should sleep through the service, nevertheless, by his presence testifies his faith in an empty tomb and the throne of God filled by a man who rose from that tomb.

But the motive by which the apostle appeals to Christians not to forsake the assembling of themselves together on the Lord's Day is the fact that our Lord is coming a SECOND time. He says:

"Not forsaking the assembling of ourselves together, as the manner of some is; but exhorting one another: and so much the more, as ye see the day approaching. . . For yet a little while, and he that shall come will come, and will not tarry." (Heb. 10:25,37)

The Second Coming of our Lord Jesus Christ is bound up with the exhortation to Break Bread, to eat the Lord's Supper.

The Breaking of Bread, or the Lord's Supper, is intended to memorialize the *Lord's death*.

The *bread* is the symbol of His *crucified body*.

The *wine* is the *blood* poured forth as the *seal* of the *covenant*.

The ordinance is intended to teach that the blood of sacrifice is the only ground of approach to a holy God; that the death of Christ is a sacrifice for sin (not the death of a martyr, not the death of one who came too far ahead of his time and was "torn in pieces by the whirling wheel of the world's evil"); that His body was given to bear the judgment due to our sins; that His blood is a witness He has by and through His death, met and answered all the claims of divine righteousness against the chief of sinners.

The Lord's Supper is a memorial picture of the scene outside the gates of Jerusalem, of that sacrificially stained cross whereon He died for us; and when we gather at the table we may well by faith suddenly see Him hanging there, turning His blood-stained face towards us, looking at each one of us and saying in voice that should penetrate to the very depth and core of our souls: "I am dying here and giving my life a ransom for thee! What art thou ready to sacrifice and give to me?"

This ordinance is to be celebrated; so it is written :

"TILL HE COME."

Hear what the apostle says:

“...YE DO SHEW THE LORD’S DEATH TILL HE COME.” (I Cor. 11:26)

The horizon of the Lord’s Table then is—The SECOND COMING.

Seated at that table on the Lord’s Day (the day of resurrection) we are on resurrection ground, *judgment behind us, glory before us*.

Behind us the cross where we were judged in the suffering and death of our substitute; before us the Coming of our Lord and the glory and immortality He will bring us.

The Second Coming of our Lord Jesus Christ is bound up with the exhortation to love God.

“And the Lord direct your hearts into the love of God, and into the *patient* waiting for Christ.” (II Thess. 3:5)

Is there anything more practical than the exhortation to love God? And here it is bound up with and identified with the attitude of waiting for Christ.

On the margin it is written, “the patience of Christ;” but the patience of Christ is that patience He exercises because of the exhortation of His Father who when He received Him into heaven and bade Him sit upon the throne, said unto Him, “. . . Sit thou at my right hand, until I make thine enemies thy footstool.” (Ps. 110:1) He tells Him that the rod or sceptre of His power shall be extended from Zion, that He shall rule in the midst of His enemies, and that His people (the Jews) shall be willing in the *day* of His power. (See Ps. 110)

This is the patience of Christ, and when the apostle prays the Lord may direct our hearts into the love of God and the patience of Christ, he is praying that while our hearts flow out in love and praise to God the Father we are to be full of the patience of Christ, and with Him wait in confidence and peace for the hour of His return.

The Second Coming of our Lord Jesus Christ is bound up with the exhortation to love one another.

“And the Lord make you to increase and abound in love one toward another. . . To the end he may stablish your hearts unblameable in holiness before God, even our Father, at the *Coming of our Lord Jesus Christ* with all his saints.” (I Thess. 3:12,13)

We are to love one another as Christians.

It was the love of Christians for each other, their desire to help and bless each other which drew the attention of the world to the early Church. They said, “See, how these Christians love one another.”

And we are exhorted to keep this flame of mutual love and helpfulness burning because the Lord is coming.

Surely if He came and found a lack of love and Christian sympathy in the Church it would be an unhappy revelation and would affect such a Church and such Christians as they should stand before His judgment seat.

The Second Coming of our Lord Jesus Christ is bound up with the exhortation to patience.

“Be patient therefore, brethren, unto the coming of the Lord. . . Be ye also patient; stablish your hearts: for *the coming of the Lord draweth nigh*.” (James 5:7,8)

This is an exhortation to patience in the midst of life’s trials and perplexities. The trials and perplexities are great; but all problems will be solved when the Lord comes. The apostle does not say they will be solved when we die and go to heaven and thus bid us to hold on and endure till such a summons comes; nay! he bids us to be patient not only because the Lord is coming, but because the *Coming of the Lord draweth nigh*.

The Second Coming of our Lord Jesus Christ is bound up with the exhortation to a holy life.

He who imagines it is permitted him to profess faith in Christ and then live a careless, godless life, greatly deceives himself.

By faith we come into union with a once crucified, but now risen and living Christ; and if this faith be genuine; if it be something more than idle words upon a thoughtless tongue; if the confession of our lips be the expression of our heart, the conviction and seal of the Spirit, then there must needs be, “the things which accompany salvation;” there must be a hearty turning away from the old life, the old character, bringing forth of fruit meet for repentance, and the daily demonstration of a life that shall demonstrate, not only that the Son of God is on His Father’s throne in heaven, but that He is as to life and nature, enthroned in that Christian, is in him the radiant and inspiring hope of glory.

The endeavor to live this life finds its appeal in the fact and doctrine of our Lord’s SECOND Coming; as it is written:

“ . . . and I pray God your whole spirit and soul and body be preserved blameless unto the *Coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.*” (1 Thess. 5:23)

The Second Coming of our Lord Jesus Christ is bound up with the exhortation to moderation.

“Let your moderation be known unto all men.” (Phil. 4:5) The word “moderation” is “mildness” and really means “gentleness.”

Our Lord Jesus Christ while true Son was real man; as a real man He was in essence and character—a *gentleman*. He was full of compassion and gracious sympathy. He moved among men as quietly as the sunlight falls upon the earth; like the sunlight, He revealed the stain, but took no spot upon Himself. He spoke with authority, but His voice was modulated and His speech exact. When He bade the storm be hushed on Galilee, it was as when a mother softly bids her babe be still, and fret no more. Masterfulness and power were His, but gentleness so great that children rested peacefully on His breast. It is never said He laughed, and there is no record that He smiled (how could He when He knew the woe of men), but in His mien there was the calm of an unruffled soul, and the dignity and refinement of a life whose every thought and word and deed was the mode of holiness and love. The keenest invective He spoke had in it none of the vituperation of men of coarse and noisy mould, but the clear and trumpet-sound of unapologetic truth.

The Apostle Paul, inspired and moved and fashioned by the risen Son of God was a polished soul, a courteous gentleman. Writing to the Thessalonians he says:

“But we were gentle among you, even as a nurse cherisheth her children” (1 Thess. 2:7)

Watch him in his attitude before kings and governors, the women gathered by the seashore or the trembling jailer at his feet. He it is who under the inspiration of the Spirit exhorts us to let our moderation, our gentleness be known.

The Christianity that does not make a man in all his speech and ways a *gentleman* and a woman in all her attitude and words a *gentlewoman*, is not the Christianity of a Paul nor the inspiration of the Son of God.

And this apostolic exhortation to mildness, to moderation and gentleness is made in view of, and by an appeal to the fact of, the SECOND Coming of our Lord; as it is written:

“Let your moderation be known unto all men. The Lord is at hand.” (Phil. 4:5)

The Second Coming of our Lord Jesus Christ is bound up with the exhortation to watchfulness.

It is the Son of God Himself who gives the exhortation. He says:

“And what I say unto you I say unto all, Watch.” (Mark 13:37)

And He says it because of His antecedent warning to them, that although He is going away like the householder into a far country, into heaven, like that householder He will come back, and in an uncertain hour; an hour so uncertain that they must needs watch—“Lest,” as He says, “coming suddenly he find you sleeping.” (Mark 13:36)

The Second Coming of our Lord Jesus Christ is bound up with the exhortation to Christian activity.

“And that, knowing the time, that now it is high time to awake out of sleep: for now is our salvation nearer (that is, the coming of the Lord to save our bodies—raise the dead and change the living) than when we believed. The night is far spent, the day is at hand (and therefore His *coming for us*; it is His coming which introduces the day): let us therefore cast off the works of darkness, and let us put on the armour of light.” (Rom. 13:11,12)

This dispensation is going, another is coming—the *Day of Christ*, the day of right and truth and divine triumph. That day will begin by the Coming of the Lord for His Church, coming in the night. He is coming as a thief. It will not do for us as Christians to be asleep. We must keep awake. We must be on the alert; not only wearing His name, but acting in His name. Could you find any stronger or more practical exhortation than this? Awaking, putting off the night clothes, putting on the day clothes, putting on armour, living as though we were already in the day of Christ; and this appeal made by the fact and imminency of His Coming?

The Second Coming of our Lord Jesus Christ is bound up with the exhortation to abide in Him.

“And now, little children, abide in him; that, when he shall appear, we may have confidence, and not be ashamed before him at his coming.” (1 John 2:28)

Nothing could be more shameful than to profess His name, stand for the faith and then be filled with doubt, with uncertainty; now true to Him, now false, now exalting His name, now allowing it to trail in the dust; shouting

hallelujahs and full of coronation songs, then falling away, holding empty hands as we walk with stumbling feet and making ourselves stumbling-blocks to others.

That is shameful here, and should the Lord come while we are in that state, we would be put to shame when we should be gathered up and called to stand at the judgment seat.

And this is not a far off contingency is it?

No, says the apostle. He is coming. He might come any time. That is his meaning. Arouse then, take your place as a Christian and abide, be no more like the waves of the sea driven and tossed.

No exhortation could be more practical or more insistent; and it is an exhortation which grows out of the apostle's belief that the Lord is Coming, and may come while we live.

The Second Coming of our Lord Jesus Christ is bound up with the exhortation not to judge one another.

"Therefore judge nothing before the time, until the Lord come. . ." (I Cor. 4:5).

Should the Lord come tonight the judgment seat would be immediately set up. As Christians we should have to stand there and answer, not for our lives, but for our work as Christians. It is sorely out of place for those who will have to answer to a common master to judge those who will have to answer to that master also. It is not worth while to be engaged in judging one another now. All things will be brought out and the truth declared. "The hidden things" of darkness will be declared. (See I Cor. 4:5) Every one shall get the praise that is his due. There will be a perfect adjustment. The highest plane of judgment now is to judge ourselves. If we judge ourselves we shall not have much leisure to judge others. When we stand at the judgment seat of Christ we shall find little occasion to plead against others. It will take all our time to plead in our own behalf.

It is written, each one of us ". . . shall give account of himself to God;" (Rom. 14:12) and this God shall be our Lord Jesus Christ.

By the SECOND Coming of our Lord Jesus Christ then the apostle urges us not to judge one another.

The Second Coming of our Lord Jesus Christ is bound up with the exhortation to pastoral fidelity.

What the Church needs today, what the Christian in the Church needs above all other things, is to be spiritually fed. The new spiritual nature cannot feed on the things which pertain to the flesh. Sheep cannot feed on that which is satisfactory to swine. To offer to spiritual men and women the food that fills the worldling would be to offer a stone for bread, a scorpion for a fish. The spiritual nature can be sustained only by the Word of God. It is to be ". . . nourished up in the words of faith and of good doctrine. . ." (I Tim. 4:6). A growing Christian must feed on the "milk" of the Word, and the "strong meat" of doctrine. He must be able to say with the prophet, "Thy words were found, and I did eat them; and thy word was unto me the joy and rejoicing of mine heart: for I am called by thy name, O LORD God of hosts." (Jer. 15:16)

Christians are not being fed today. They are not being fed because they are not taught; and only by teaching can the spiritual mind be fed and sustained. The weakness of the Church is the multitude of preachers. It is full of preachers, but not teachers. The people get sermons, essays and certain lines of homilies. They need exposition, an exposé of Scripture. The Scripture opened and exposed to their gaze. They need more than that. They need the teacher who will be ". . . rightly dividing the word of truth." (II Tim. 2:15)

Eating of food for proper assimilation needs right division of food. You cannot give the same diet to all. There are certain classes of food which belong to certain classes of persons. Just so, there are certain classes of persons indicated by Scripture and certain classes of food for those persons. The Word of God divides all mankind into "Jew, Gentile and the Church of God." (See I Cor. 10:32) There are some things in the book which belong exclusively to the Jew, some to the Gentile, and some to the Church. You cannot give the food which belongs to the Jew to the Christian. The promises made to the Church do not belong to the Jew. The teacher, the true teacher, must give to each the food that belongs to each and in due season; the men who have been called to shepherd a church, to deal with an assembly of Christ as with a flock of hungry sheep, are exhorted to feed such a flock; and they are exhorted to do so faithfully in view of the fact that when our Lord Jesus Christ Himself shall come as the great, the chief, shepherd of the flock He will reward all such faithful teachers (not preachers), with an amaranthine, that is to say, a fadeless, crown; as it is written:

"Feed the flock of God which is among you. . . and when the chief Shepherd (pastor) shall appear, ye shall receive a crown of glory that fadeth not away." (I Pet. 5:2,4)

Thus it is manifest that pastors are exhorted to be faithful teachers of the flocks, and are so exhorted by the thought of the SECOND Coming of our Lord.

The Second Coming of Christ is bound up with the exhortation to faithfulness in preaching.

It is true the minister of Christ is to preach. He is to proclaim, but always his proclamation must be based on doctrines. He is to exhort, he is to rebuke, he is to reprove; but, always he is to do this with unfailing note of doctrine.

The apostle warns that the time would come when the Church would not endure sound doctrines. The time would come when with itching ears the Church would seek teachers who should respond to their demands, teachers who should give them the fables and the fictions of human imagination and turn them away from the truth. (See II Tim. 4:3,4)

That time is on us now both in the pulpit and the pew. The people in the pew, as a rule, do not want doctrine. They do not want sound doctrine. They do not want the old faith once for all delivered. They are willing to listen to the modification of God's Word and the breaking down of the old standards. There are men in the pulpits who are responding to the demand. They reject the doctrine of fiat creation, the fall of man, the virgin birth, the atonement by blood, the bodily resurrection of Christ, His Second Coming. They set aside the idea of an inerrant, infallible Bible fully and entirely inspired of God, and set up a Christ between Bethlehem and Calvary; a Christ of exclusive humanity, or exclusively of humanity; and set Him up not as a redeemer and regenerator of men, but as an example to draw out of men the sonship with God claimed to be already inhering in them. They preach, not redemption by blood, but salvation by character.

There never was a time when the Christian minister needed more to be faithful than now, needed more to have the wisdom as well as the knowledge of God, to be led by the Divine Spirit; and never more did he need to speak the whole counsel of God, hew to the line and fear not.

The apostle appeals to the Christian minister in this hour to be faithful. In proportion as the Church refuses doctrine, let him give it. In proportion as it seeks darkness let him pour on the light of truth; and the apostle appeals to this faithfulness by appealing to, and exhorting by, the SECOND Coming of the Lord.

Hear what he says. According to the literal rendering of the passage he says:

"I charge thee therefore before God, and the Lord Jesus Christ, who shall judge the quick and the dead at his appearing (and *by* his appearing) and his kingdom;

Preach the Word: be instant in season, out of season; reprove, rebuke, exhort, with all long suffering and doctrine."

The SECOND Coming of Christ is the basis on which the apostle bids the Christian minister to preach, and so preach that he may sustain the sound doctrine committed to his charge.

The Second Coming of our Lord Jesus Christ is bound up with the exhortation to comfort and console those who mourn their Christian dead.

It is true, blessedly true, that should we die, we as Christians, "depart. . .to be with Christ;" (Phil. 1:23) and it is a state advanced upon this, better and "far better." It is true, consolingly true, that should we die we shall be "absent" from our home in this body and "present" at our home "with the Lord" (See II Cor. 5:8); and just as surely as Saul recognized Samuel in his disembodied state, and Abraham recognized the rich man though both had died and their bodies been buried, just that sure is it, should the Lord bid us to ascend to Heaven through death before He comes, that we shall see and know each other; yet the apostle does not seek to comfort the sorrowing concerning the dead in Christ by any such appeal as that. On the contrary, he offers what to him is a quicker, more imminent comfort, the comfort that the Lord Himself is coming from heaven; and just as he called Lazarus from the grave and gave him to the weeping sisters and they rejoiced in a reunion that triumphed over death and the grave; so will He descend, it may be any moment, into the upper air, and calling the dead from their graves and transfiguring the living, lift them up as in clouds that are chariots to meet Him and one another, and forevermore be with Him and with one another.

Hear how the inspired apostle comforts Christians who sorrow above their Christian dead:

"But I would not have you to be ignorant, brethren, concerning them which are asleep, that ye sorrow not, even as others which have no hope.

“For if we believe that Jesus died and rose again, even so them also which sleep in Jesus (whom Jesus has put to sleep) will God bring with him.

“For this we say unto you by the word of the Lord, that *we which are alive and remain unto the coming of the Lord* shall not prevent (go before) them which are asleep.

“For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first:

“Then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord.

“Wherefore comfort one another with *these words*.” (I Thess. 4:13-18)

Thus have I demonstrated and proved what I have affirmed; that the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ is bound up with every fundamental doctrine, every sublime promise, every radiant hope, every practical exhortation, and affords the basis of apostolic appeal in behalf of the highest type of every day Christian living and devotion.

Repudiate the Second Coming and you take away the resurrection of the dead in Christ, the hoped for transfiguration of the living, the manifested sonship with God and likeness to Christ, the assurance of reward, the promised satisfaction of the soul, the victory over Satan and the deliverance of this earth from the bondage of corruption.

Take out the Second Coming and you take out of the New Testament the appeal to meet together on the Lord's Day, the appeal to meet around the Lord's Table and break bread, the appeal to love God, to love one another, to patience, to a holy life, to watchfulness, to Christian activity, to moderation, to abiding in Christ, the warning against judging one another as Christians, the appeal to steadfastness, to pastoral fidelity, to faithfulness in preaching, and the inspired words of comfort with which we are to comfort one another about the Christian dead.

The doctrine of the Second Coming unimportant!

Unimportant, when it is inwrought with doctrines without which Christianity would be as a half-naked and pitiable beggar asking for alms, even the indifferent consideration of a careless world.

The doctrine of the Second Coming not practical!

Not practical, when it is the very basis on which, by the inspiration of the Holy Ghost the apostles appeal to all that can make Christianity a living, a fruitful and helpful profession among the sons of men.

Certainly, those who repudiate the Second Coming of our Lord Jesus Christ are excuselessly ignorant of the Word of God, wilfully prejudiced, or brutally unbelieving and infidelic. Those who are ignorant of the Word have no right to speak about it, those who are prejudiced are unqualified, and those who are infidelic ought to have no place in the Church of Christ.

It must be evident, and in the very nature of the case, that the promises and appeals coincident with the Second Coming of our Lord Jesus Christ require there should be, and so demonstrate there is, a stage or part of the coming in relation to the Church which makes it *imminent*.

What folly, what utter waste of words, what altogether meaninglessness, not to say stupidity, in exhorting me, a living man, to be patient unto the Coming of the Lord, if the Lord cannot come for, at least, a thousand years, and on the theory the world is to be converted by the Gospel, for several thousand years. What an insult to intelligence, what a shock to faith, what an appeal to unbelief in the whole thing to add, “. . .the coming of the Lord draweth nigh;” (James 5:8) and then to give it still greater emphasis, to say, “. . .the Judge standeth before the door.” (James 5:9) Tell me the Lord's Coming is so nigh, that already He is on the eve of summoning me with the Church to His judgment seat; and then for me to discover that by no possibility could He come while I am alive! What would that be but a striking, an indisputable proof that the Scriptures contradict themselves, and are wholly unreliable?

If the Lord will not come, and cannot come while I am alive, how utterly grotesque, worse even than that, is the prayer in which the apostle prays my whole spirit, soul and body shall be preserved blameless unto the coming of the Lord. (See I Thess. 5:23)

If it is not possible for me to live till the Lord comes, of what downright deception or childish babbling is the apostle guilty when he writes such a sentence as this:

“. . .we which are alive and remain unto the coming of the Lord. . .” (I Thess. 4:15).

And again:

“. . . We shall not all sleep (that is, die), but we shall all be changed,” (I Cor. 15:51); not die, but live till the Lord comes and transfigures us into His own likeness.

If the Lord may not come any moment for the Church, of what trifling verbiage is the apostle guilty when he commends the Thessalonians because they have turned to God from idols to serve the living and the true God and—to wait for His Son from heaven? (See I Thess. 1:9,10)

If the Lord may not come *any moment*, of what possible value can His own most solemn exhortation be?

This solemn and intense exhortation:

“*Watch therefore: for ye know not what hour your Lord doth come.*” (Matt. 24:42)

If these exhortations, if the whole trend of these appeals, do not mean *imminency*; if they do not mean the Lord may come while we are alive, in some unexpected hour or moment, and, therefore, so far as our knowledge is concerned, any moment, then the New Testament, as an instrument for the transmission of intelligent thought must be set aside.

But why discuss it! The language is clear, plain, unmistakable. You must accept it, or reject the book. You must accept the words of the Lord as He speaks them or reject Him as one who does not speak the truth. The words are so simple, so direct, without the slightest sinuosity or double turning, that the puzzling word “interpretation” cannot come in to misplace or attempt to define them. There they are. He says I am coming. Be on the lookout for Me, watch for Me. He meant that or He did not. He told the actual truth, or He did not. There is no middle ground. You must take them or reject them. The apostles say, “Wait.” They meant it just as the Lord meant it. They were as honest as He was; or, both were dishonest.

He says the hour is unknown. The moment is equally unknown. There is only one thing certain about it. He will come, not only when the world is not thinking about it, but when the Churches are not thinking about it; and it is dead certain the Churches are not thinking about it today.

“Therefore be ye also ready:” (Matt. 24:44).

He said so.

He who is the Son of God, the truth and no lie, He said it.

He said it for the Churches that should be after He should ascend to heaven.

He said it for the Churches in any and every hour after He had ascended to heaven.

“Therefore be ye also ready.”

It would be amazing foolery to attempt to apply it to any generation but a present generation.

“Therefore be ye also ready.”

It means we are always on the threshold of His Coming.

It is impossible to mean anything else.

It does mean that.

It means the Coming of our Lord Jesus Christ *is imminent*.

Since the Coming of our Lord Jesus Christ is imminent, it ought to be an incentive and a hope.

It should be an incentive to the highest Christian living.

If the Lord should come tomorrow you would not wish Him to find you doing what a Christian ought not to do; nor, would you like Him to find you where a Christian ought not to be.

You surely would wish to meet Him with your accounts all straight, your responsibilities discharged and your life without fault. You would not wish to be put to shame at His Coming.

Because He is Coming, and because our *place* in the kingdom will depend upon the *character* we are living as Christians; then the “any moment” Coming of the Lord should be an incentive to the noblest type of Christian living, Christian service and devotion.

Since the Coming of Christ means all for which our hearts are yearning; since it means the fulfilment of our redemption, the exaltation of the Church into the place of rulership and power, and the transformation of the world

into an arena for God, for righteousness and peace, it is as it has been divinely called:

“THE BLESSED HOPE.”

It is to be held, not merely as a doctrine, but *as a hope*; and we are told that he that hath it as a hope upon the Lord will purify himself even as He is pure. (See I John 3:3)

If the Lord is Coming: yea, if I really wish Him to come, then will I truly seek, and involuntarily, each passing moment to be in full accord with Him.

With the apostle, therefore, I beseech you brethren, by the Coming of the Lord that ye be not moved away from the hope of the Gospel, “. . .the hope of glory;” (Col. 1:27) that ye let no time be wasted; that ye be always ready; for, in an hour when ye think not He may come. Already the air is blowing as from suddenly opened gates in heaven; already the sensitive earth is shivering as though His presence were drawing nigh, indeed. If He should come this night He would bid you stand before Him, and at once, without delay, give an account for the deeds done in the body, for the life you have professed to live in His name.

Be ready, Christian, for you, and not another, must give an account of yourself to Him, He who is none other than our great God and Saviour Jesus Christ. It is true He will bring to light every hidden thing of darkness unconfessed; but it is, also, blessedly true that every Christian shall have praise of Him for the slightest thing done in His name; neither the cup of cold water given nor the word fitly spoken will be forgot.

Men out of Christ!

You are not safe a moment out of Christ. Get into Christ.

He is your only shelter.

I say get into Christ; and you *can* get into Him.

You can get into Him by letting Him get into you.

He will enter into you and possess you if you will but throw your soul wide open by faith in Him.

The exercise of that faith should be clear, simple, direct and objective.

Claim Him on that cross as the sacrifice for sin provided by God Himself. Claim Him as your personal substitute. Offer Him as such to God, and God the Father will accept Him on your behalf. In a moment you shall be delivered from the penalty of sin. You will be legally justified. You will be safe, as safe as the children of Israel under the sprinkled blood of the Passover night in Egypt. The moment you believe Christ becomes your Passover. His blood meets your case and answers all demands of divine righteousness. The Risen Christ will impart His perfect life; and thus, redeemed, justified, regenerated, you shall belong to Him; and were He to come, even now, this minute, you, the sincere believer, would be in Him, He would be in you; and by grace, through faith you would be forever saved and glorified.

Now is the accepted time. Now is yours and not tomorrow.

Tomorrow may not be grace. Tomorrow may be judgment.

Delay not, lose no time, fly to the shelter of the blood.

III

IS THE COMING OF CHRIST BEFORE OR AFTER THE MILLENNIUM?

Is the Coming of Christ Before or After the Millennium?

AND Enoch also, the seventh from Adam, prophesied of these, saying, Behold, the Lord cometh with ten thousands of his saints," (Jude 14).

"And I saw an angel come down from heaven, having the key of the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand.

"And he laid hold on the dragon, that old serpent, which is the Devil, and Satan, and bound him a thousand years,

"And cast him into the bottomless pit, and shut him up, and set a seal upon him, that he should deceive the nations no more, till the thousand years should be fulfilled: and after that he must be loosed a little season. . .

"Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection: on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with him a thousand years." (Revelation 20:1-6)

The "*thousand years*" is the term which in Scripture represents that golden era foretold by prophet, priest and king, when our Lord Jesus Christ as King of kings and Lord of lords shall set up His kingdom of righteousness and peace and reign and rule in undisturbed authority among the sons of men.

The thousand years of Scripture are commonly known by the word, "millennium." This is a Latin word compounded of *mille*, a thousand, and *annus*, a year.

The doctrine of a millennium is believed in and accepted more or less by all Christians.

All Christians do not agree as to the manner in which it is to be introduced.

There are those who believe and teach that as the age goes on the Gospel will be less and less successful, the Church instead of overcoming the world will be overcome by the world, sin, iniquity, lawlessness and war will increase. At an undetermined moment the Lord will suddenly come into the upper air, raise the dead in Christ, transfigure the living and genuine Christians and take them to Himself to Heaven; the world, for a season will be given over to Satanic power; iniquity will head itself up in monstrous and blasphemous forms; then the Lord with His previously caught-up saints will descend in majesty and might, execute judgment against all unrighteousness, cleanse the earth, and having bound Satan and rendered him helpless for a thousand years bring in the kingdom of life and peace.

Because those who teach this believe the Lord must come *before* the millennium, that it *must* precede it, they are called:

Pre-Millennialists.

Another class of persons believe and teach that the Gospel will win its widening way, dominate society and government, the spirit of Christ will pervade all hearts, all will believe in the Fatherhood of God and the brotherhood of man, envy, jealousy and hatred will be banished, war shall cease, swords will be beaten into plough shares and spears into pruning hooks, for a thousand years the arts of peace will be cultivated and the genius of man revealed.

At the end of this period of peace and spiritual triumph the Lord will come; there will be a general pell-mell resurrection; the righteous will be separated from the unrighteous; the earth will pass through purifying fires, become the abode of the finally righteous and sweep on forever to the music of the spheres.

Because this class of persons believe and teach the Lord will not come till after the millennium, they are known as:

Post-Millennialists.

They constitute the majority in the professing Church. They furnish the presidents and faculties of our theological institutions, editors of our religious periodicals, fill the pulpits and lead and shape our denominational interests.

They call themselves "orthodox." They look upon pre-millennialists as pessimists clad in the garb of darkness and despair, giving utterance to words and testimony which deny all hope. They consider them unsound in doctrine, depressing in method, a hindrance to the enthusiasm and progress of the Church. They call themselves optimists, the people of the sunlit message and defenders of a triumphant Gospel.

In the face of all this I affirm, I shall demonstrate and prove, the post-millennial theory of the world's conversion before the Coming of the Lord to be extra-Biblical, wholly unscriptural, without a single foundation in the Word of God, confusing in exposition, utterly absurd as exegesis and contradicted by the facts of history, observation and experience.

The history of the Gospel to this hour and the attitude which the post-millennialists hold concerning the Second Coming carry in themselves presumptive evidence that the proposition of a world's conversion by the Gospel is entirely false.

Since that hour when the Son of God sent forth His disciples to preach the good news of His death and resurrection to every creature, two thousand years have passed. And today after the most unexampled display of heroic devotion, of unqualified consecration, the unstinted outpouring of life and treasure and the claimed presence and power of the Holy Ghost, of the sixteen hundred millions of the earth's population, not more than four hundred million, one-fourth, make an actual profession of the name of Christ. And of that number not more than a third, if so many as that, give evidence of the indwelling life of Christ. In other words, there are more heathen, more idolaters, more unbelievers, infidels and mere professors of religion than when Christianity began.

At the same rate of progress it will take six thousand years before the whole world makes a confession of Christ; and then in the same diminishing ratio spiritually not more than oneninth would be actual Christians.

But admitting for arguments' sake that tomorrow at twelve o'clock noon, every man woman and child will be genuinely converted, even then, according to the post-millennial theory a thousand years will have to elapse before the Lord can come. It is clear enough long before that time every man, woman and child now living would be dead, turned to dust, and forgotten; but you know and I know the world will not be converted by tomorrow, nor many tomorrows; and that at this present rate of Gospel advance, plus the thousand years or millennium, it will be seven thousand years before we can legitimately hope for the Coming of the Lord.

What interest can you have in that coming? What interest can I have in it? Why should I dig and delve and seek to find the heart of every passage which speaks of that coming? There's no reason for me to have any interest. There is every reason to lose all interest, to be wholly indifferent to it.

And this is just the attitude of the post-millennialist to the Second Coming of our Lord.

He has no interest in it. He never talks of it. It is never in his heart or mind. If he is a preacher he never preaches it; and, in truth, his ignorance of what the Bible really says concerning it; what it plainly and continuously teaches about it is, as a rule, as deeply midnight as the palpable darkness of Egypt.

But—I have shown you in previous sermons that the record of the Second Coming is inwrought with the whole constitution of the Bible from Genesis to Revelation; that it is inwrought with and woven into its very fibre and essence; that it is more often spoken of than any other event or doctrine in the Bible; that while the word "atonement" occurs but once in the New Testament and should not be at all translated "atonement," but, "reconciliation" (the consequence of atonement) the mention of the Second Coming occurs once in every twenty verses. I also showed you that not only is the statement of the Second Coming woven into every filament of the Bible, but is bound up with every fundamental doctrine, every sublime promise, every radiant hope and every practical exhortation; and that it affords the basis upon which the apostles make their appeal for the highest type of daily and dutiful Christian living. Not only this, but as I hope to show later, the New Testament exhorts us as Christians to take the attitude of waiting for the Lord, looking for the Lord. We are exhorted to watch, be ready, and are warned that He will come suddenly like a thief and in an hour when we think not. The Apostle Paul writing to the Church at Thessalonica commends them, not only because they had turned to God from idols to serve the living and true God, but to wait for His Son from Heaven. I have gone into and examined all the words in the New Testament in respect to His Coming and if it does not mean "*imminency*;" if it does not mean that we are always to live as though it were possible in our day, or at "any moment," then language has no certain meaning and words are simply instruments to magnify darkness and diminish the light.

Now since the indifference, the absolute indifference of the post-millennial attitude to the Coming of Christ is a straightforward, unqualified contradiction of the attitude demanded by the Scripture; as this attitude is produced by the post-millennial proposition that the world must be converted before the millennium, then this proposition carries with it the presumptive evidence of its own fallacy, of its utter untruth.

But the evidence is not only presumptive, it is direct.

The direct evidence is given by our Lord Jesus Christ.

He gives this evidence in a series of parables recorded in the thirteenth chapter of Matthew, the parables of the Sower, the Wheat and the Tares, the Mustard Tree, a woman hiding Leaven in the Meal, and the Drag-net Cast into the sea.

The sower cast his seed, some fell upon the wayside and the birds picked them up. Some fell upon a rock and immediately sprung up, but since there was not sufficient earth to take root, they withered and fell away. Others fell among thorns and were choked. The rest fell upon good ground and brought forth fruit in different degree.

Two things are clear enough in this parable.

First, only a portion of the whole ground sowed over received the seed.

Second, there were three hindrances to the reception of it:

The birds which picked it up.

The rocky ground which resisted it.

The thorny ground which choked it.

Our Lord explains the parable.

The sower is anyone who preaches the Word of God.

The seed is the Word of God.

The four kinds of ground represent four kinds of hearers:

The wayside hearer.

That is, the indifferent hearer. He over whose heart as a beaten pathway the providences of God and the Gospel of His love pass on and leave no impression.

The rocky ground hearer.

That is, the emotional hearer who responds with enthusiasm, but in whose soul the truth finds no root; one who is a professor, but not a possessor.

The thorny ground hearer.

That is, the worldlying who is occupied with his business responsibilities, the claims of the world and the pursuit of riches.

The *birds* represent *the work of the Devil*.

The *rocky ground* represents *the flesh*.

The *thorny ground* the world.

Two things there are to be learned in the application of the parable:

First, during the absence of our Lord the Gospel would have, not a universal, but *fractional* reception.

Is it necessary to recall to you what has already been said, that after two thousand years of Gospel preaching, out of the world's population only a fourth part have made any pretence to receive it?

Second, during the absence of our Lord there would be a trinity of persistent, unchanging opposition to the Gospel, the world, the flesh, and the Devil.

It requires little demonstration to show that this opposition has continued all along the ages and was never more manifested than now.

The *world* offers its cups, its sparkling wine, its dance, its places of amusement, its pleasures of sin, the crown of ambition, the glitter of gold and silver, the promise of wealth, of ease and comfort. It stretches out its arms soft and caressing, saying with siren voice, "Come and enjoy me." The very sound of its laughter and music drowns the notes of the Gospel.

The *flesh* opposes the Gospel often as much by its acceptance as its rejection; for, it makes professors and not possessors. The flesh, like the rock, is impervious to the Gospel; it is the enemy of the Gospel because it is the enemy of the spirit.

The *Devil* is that unseen but all-pervading genius who combines the world and the flesh and leads them into continuous assault against all who would turn to God.

There is no hint or suggestion in this parable of a world converted and surrendered to Christ during His absence.

A householder, the Lord tells us in the next parable, sows good seed in his field. While his servants slept an enemy came and sowed tares among the wheat and went his way. When the wheat appeared the tares appeared also. The servant wished to go out and root them up. The householder forbade them because in rooting up the tares they might root up the wheat. Both must grow together till the harvest. Then he would send out the reapers to bind the tares in bundles to be burned, but the wheat should be gathered into the barn.

Two things are plainly set forth here.

First, the wheat and the tares grow side by side till the harvest.

Second, at the harvest the field instead of being *all wheat* is seen to be a *mixed* field of wheat and tares.

The disciples did not understand the parable. When the Lord entered the house the disciples came to Him and asked Him to explain it.

He explained it to them.

The field, He said, is the world. The good seed the children of the kingdom, the tares the children of the Devil. The enemy who sowed them is the Devil. The harvest is the end of the age. The reapers are the angels. At the end of this age the Lord will send forth His angels (they will both precede and be with Him at His Coming) and they shall gather out of His kingdom all things that offend; then shall the righteous shine forth and the reign of righteousness begin.

Two things are taught in the application:

First, side by side with the Church of Christ in the world there would spring up as the work of the Devil, counterfeit systems of Christianity.

These systems are here.

The Roman Catholic Church, a church of invented human doctrine, an apostate church, a monstrous compound of Judaism, Paganism, and Christianity.

The Greek Church, full of image worship, idolatry and multiplied popery.

The Universalist Church, assuring salvation to all both good and bad and making the Gospel and the preaching of it unnecessary.

The Unitarian Church, denying the deity of the Son of God and the penal sacrifice of the cross.

The Christian Science Church, which says the blood of Christ was of no more avail when shed on the cross than when flowing through His veins in daily life, denies the Trinity and the personality of God, teaches Jesus and Christ to have been entirely distinct, Christ the principle of truth, Jesus simply an "idea conceived" by the Virgin Mary, and as a material appearance, non-existent today.

Emmanuelism, which locates the powers of salvation in the subconscious mind instead of interpenetrating it with the mind of Christ.

New thought, and a whole crowd of cults and systems which borrow the name of Christ, parade as Christianity and deny both.

Second, at the end of the age when the Lord comes He will find, not a world in which all are children of God, but a world divided between children of God and children of the Devil. A mixed world of good and evil.

Is there any suggestion, any ground here upon which a teacher loyal to the truth of Christ can stand and preach the conversion of the world by the Gospel?

The Lord continues His discourse by speaking of a grain of mustard seed cast into the ground. It springs up, becomes a great tree and spreads forth its branches. In proportion as it expands, it roots itself deeper in the earth. It becomes a shelter and a dwelling place for birds.

Two things are declared:

First, the tree becomes *a shelter for birds*.

Second, it is *deeply rooted in the earth*.

The mustard tree represents the beginning and expansion of the professing Church.

It began with a hundred and twenty members. It has grown and multiplied until today its branches are to be found beneath every sky, in every land.

The birds according to the Son of God Himself (as set forth in the parable of the sower, for the word "fowls" there, is the same word, "birds," here) are symbols of Satan and his agents.

Two things are thus definitely taught by the parable:

First, During our Lord's absence the professing Church would afford a shelter, a dwelling place for Satan as well as for Christ.

Startling as the statement may seem you have only to read Church history to find it confirmed.

When you read of the wickedness committed in its name; when you read of racks and stake and torture set up and wrought by its authority; when you hear the tramp of contending factions and see the very altars and shrines in its buildings drenched with fratricidal blood; when you listen to the false doctrines which from time to time have been promulgated by it; when you know the paganism of the Romish Church, the idolatry of the Greek Church, and

the infidelity, the worldliness and unspirituality of Protestantism, you may well believe the professing Church has been a dwelling place for evil as well as good, a habitation for Satan as well as Christ.

Second, In proportion as the Church has *expanded*, it has *rooted* itself in and identified itself with the world and the life that now is. More and more every day the Church is moving down from the plane of the supernatural to the purely natural and ethical; more and more it is transforming itself into a society for competitive morality; more and more becoming identified with civilization, becoming one of its coincident factors; more and more in turning away from spirituality, from regeneration and the things that are eternal is it taken up with the endeavor to make this world a better place for the natural man to live in, and to make the natural man a better man to live in it.

The professing Church repudiates the whole law and principle of unfoldment in wheat.

Wheat as it ripens at the top loosens at the root, lets go its hold on the earth. This is particularly so with corn.

In proportion as the spiritual life develops in a believer he lets go his grasp on earth and earthly things ripening and maturing heavenward.

The professing Church fails here utterly. Its whole course is a repudiation of those symbols. Every day it is laying aside its heavenly characteristics and becoming more and more earthly; more and more *a world Church*, a church of the world, included in and a part of that system of man.

Surely, this is not a Church to lead men out of the world; nor is it a Church to bring a spiritually-conquered world to the feet of a triumphant Christ.

In the next parable a woman is seen hiding leaven in three measures of meal till the whole lump is leavened.

The post-millennialist seizes upon this parable with uncommon avidity, declaring the operation of the leaven hidden in the meal till the lump is wholly pervaded by it is a clear and conclusive illustration of the way in which the Gospel is to pervade and possess the world.

But some things about this parable ought to be clear, indeed!

You will note that the woman takes three *measures* of meal. *Three measures!* but three measures out of any quantity is *not the whole*. If I take three measures of apples out of a full barrel I certainly am not taking all the apples. I cannot be said to have taken the whole. If I take three measures of meal out of a barrel of meal I am not taking all the meal in the barrel.

Three measures of any thing is not the whole of that thing.

And as the Gospel is to be preached, not to a measured number, but to the *whole world*, then the three measures of meal cannot possibly set forth the whole world; and, therefore, the proposition that the leaven entirely pervading it, leavening it, is the Gospel filling the world and converting it breaks down of its own weight.

But, there is not the slightest need of a moment's darkness, nor a moment's waste of time concerning the identity of the "lump" of meal so leavened.

In the first epistle to the Corinthians, the fifth chapter; the apostle tells us the "lump" (and the three measures of meal became a lump) is a symbol of the professing Church. The Church is exhorted to purge out the old leaven that it may be a "new lump."

In hiding leaven in the lump of meal the woman is symbolically hiding whatever it symbolizes *not in the world*, but in the *professing Church*.

Now it is a startling fact that the professing Church of Christ in the world today is divided into three great measures:—

The Roman Catholic Church.

The Greek Church.

The Protestant Church.

As the Gospel is to be preached to the world and *not to the Church*; and since the lump or three measures set forth *the Church* and *not the world*, then the leaven hidden in the meal cannot be the Gospel pervading the world.

But, mark you well the leaven is to be *hidden*.

This is not the method in which the Gospel is to be introduced into the world.

Our Lord said what He told the disciples in darkness must be spoken *in the light*; what they heard in the ear must be preached upon *the housetops*.

The very word, "Gospel," signifies, "glad tidings," and "tidings" are things, not to be *hidden* but told abroad. The very symbol of the Gospel, that is to say, a *trumpet*, denies that it is at any time or in any place to be *hidden*. There is nothing secret about the Gospel, like the trumpet, its sound is to be heard by all ears.

Leaven may be hidden, but the Gospel, in the very nature of the case, cannot be hidden.

But let us consider what leaven actually is.

It is a *sour, corrupt, putrid* and *putrefying* thing.

Is it possible that that which is wholly corrupt and corrupting shall be the chosen symbol of that which is wholly incorruptible, pure, good, and true?

But, look you! When the Passover was celebrated leaven must be entirely removed from the house.

To allow the leaven to remain was to subject the individual to the judgment of God. Every Israelite who permitted it was excommunicated.

The Passover is the symbol or type of the Cross of Christ, His death and the redemption achieved by His blood. It is the type of that which is the very heart of the Gospel.

If leaven be the symbol of the Gospel why should it be cast out of the house under an anathema of threatened judgment and not permitted to remain as a constituent part of the Passover?

To ask the question is to answer it.

Its repudiation during the celebration of that which sets forth the sacrifice of the Son of God is a demonstration that leaven is not and in the nature of the case cannot be the symbol of the Gospel.

The Son of God, the very headquarters of truth leaves us in no possible doubt as to the meaning and application of leaven.

He tells us it is the symbol of false and corrupt doctrine.

He speaks of the leaven of the Pharisees and Sadducees.

The Pharisees stood for ritualism and religious hypocrisy.

The Sadducees stood for annihilation. They denied both angel and spirit. They repudiated the resurrection of the body.

Thus leaven is a symbol of *ritualism, religious hypocrisy, annihilation* and the *denial of the resurrection*.

The Apostle Paul tells us that it symbolizes *vain glory, malice, legalism, the works of the flesh*, the old nature of enmity with God.

Ritualism.

Religious hypocrisy.

Annihilation.

Denial of the Resurrection.

Vain-glory.

Malice.

Legalism.

The works of the flesh.

The Flesh.

What an arraignment it is against any such proposition that leaven signifies or in any fashion whatever symbolizes the Gospel.

It is beyond all question the Scriptural declaration that leaven is *false and corrupt doctrine*, and is here set forth as false and corrupt doctrine introduced into the Church.

A woman in Scripture is used either in a distinctively and uncompromisingly good or bad sense.

A *good* woman sets forth the true Church.

A *bad* woman the false church.

The action of this woman (considered symbolically) is not good. It is bad. She hides false doctrine in the Church. She makes this false and corrupt doctrine to permeate the whole professing Church.

This symbolic woman may be seen in the book of Revelation.

There she is presented as *Jezebel* and the woman clothed “. . . in purple and scarlet colour. . .” the *Scarlet woman*, the *Mother of Harlots*, whose name is *Babylon*. (Rev. 17:4,5)

These women are symbols of Rome.

Rome is the inventor of false and corrupt doctrine. It was Rome that invented such doctrines as the Immaculate Conception, Transubstantiation, the Mass or a perpetually sacrificed Christ, Purgatory, Papal Indulgences, and Papal infallibility. It is Rome that exalts the Church above the Bible, above the Word of God, and makes the final authority in the human conscience to be, not a “Thus saith the Lord,” but “thus says Rome.”

From the beginning the Church began to be filled with false doctrine. The apostles clearly foretold these evil teachings would be more and more manifested as the age should go on.

So far from the professing Church filling the world with truth we are taught by the Son of God that it would become the purveyor of false and evil doctrines filling the world with theological errors.

Our Lord’s final parable is the story of a net cast into the sea—a great drag net—which when men drew to the shore they found to be full of fish, both good and bad. They gathered the good into vessels, the bad they cast away.

This net is the purpose of God as expressed in the Gospel, sweeping on through the age and like a net gathering into the professing Church out of the troubled waters of the world all sorts, both good and bad. At the end of the age there will be a separation. The good will be *taken away*, the bad *cast away*.

The very statement is an unequivocal declaration that the professing Church would be made up of regenerate and unregenerate members; that, at least, there would be in the great sea of the world those who professing the name of Christ should be regenerated, and those who, also, professing the name of Christ should be unregenerated.

Just as the field was a *mixed* field, a world *divided* between Christ and the Devil; so, the professing Church would be divided and, in the end of the age, those truly Christ’s would be taken out of the world and made immortal, given bodies as vessels of glory and others rejected and left behind.

In the face of such testimony as this, and with an open Bible before him, on what basis does any man pretend to teach that the Church through the Gospel is to convert the world?

In another and distinct discourse our Lord corroborates what He has said about the division of the professing Church.

He delivers the parable of ten virgins who went forth to meet the bridegroom. Five were wise, five were foolish. The foolish took their lamp, and took no oil with them. The wise took oil in their vessels with their lamps. While the bridegroom tarried they all slumbered and slept. At midnight a cry was made that the bridegroom was coming. All the virgins arose and trimmed their lamps. The foolish found their lamps going out and sought to borrow oil from the wise. They bade them go and buy for themselves. While they went to buy the bridegroom came and they that were ready went in with him to the marriage and the door was shut. Then came the foolish virgins, knocked at the closed shut door, plead with the bridegroom to open unto them; but he refused, answering that he knew them not.

The virgins represent the assemblies of Christ. Paul tells the Corinthian Church (and this is the Church of Gospel order; that is to say, the Church which furnishes the occasion for the Apostle Paul speaking by the Spirit in his epistle to put one thing after another in order according to the mind of God), Paul tells this Church that it has been presented to Christ as a chosen *virgin*.

At the beginning the Church was told to wait like an affianced virgin for the return of the Lord, not as a king, but as the bridegroom.

At the beginning the Church accepted this exhortation, separated herself from the world and with upward look and heavenly walk waited for the Coming of the Lord.

This was the attitude Paul commended in the Thessalonian Church as the model Church of the New Testament.

He said:

“. . . ye turned to God from idols to serve the living and true God; And to wait for his Son from heaven. . .” (I Thess. 1:9,10).

The Lord did not come. The Church lost the hope of His return. It fell asleep on the bosom of that world to which it at once surrendered itself.

About seventy years ago the cry rang through the Church:

“Behold, the bridegroom cometh; go ye out to meet Him.”

The cry has been an arousing one.

Many are preparing to meet Him.

How will He come?

Will He come when the sunlight is falling on the earth? Will He come at the midnight of Gospel triumph, when all the world is singing hosannas and praises to His name?

Nay!

He is represented as coming at *midnight*. Midnight is a symbol of spiritual darkness, ignorance and indifference.

He is coming then, not when the world is wide awake and filled with the light of His glory, but asleep in the black midnight of sin, of shame and woeful ignorance of Himself.

And what will take place when He comes? One part of the professing Church, like the wise virgins (who with oil in their vessels represent Christians with the Holy Ghost in their bodies) will be taken to Heaven and to the marriage of the Lamb.

The other part like the foolish virgins (who represent mere profession in the shining of the lamp, but have no oil, no Holy Spirit in their bodies) those who are unregenerate, will be left behind, shut out to judgment, to tribulation and to woe.

The official voice of the Son of God will declare:

“. . . Verily I say unto you, I know you not.” (Matt. 25:12) What think you of that? A church, a professing Church, one-half saved, the other half unsaved?

Where, I ask you, is there any indication of a united Church marching on with the sound of a triumphant Gospel to the purple and the gold of immediate millennial days?

Our Lord now tells the story of a woman who went to a judge, a lawyer, to ask him to take up her case and deliver her from the adversary.

The judge was unjust and refused at first to listen to her cry. But she continued, persistently demanding deliverance. He became wearied with her importunity. He answered her prayer. He vindicated her cause. He delivered her.

The Lord teaches that this woman is Israel and here, particularly, the Jew.

The Lord is the true and the just judge.

By this parable He declares He will hear the cry of His people, just as of old He heard the appeal for help from among the brick kilns of Egypt.

In that near-coming hour when their adversary the anti-Christ shall rise to persecute them His ear will be open to the cry of the “elect remnant.” He will come down to deliver them; but in giving this parabolic assurance He asks the far-meaning question, “. . . when the Son of man cometh, shall he find faith on the earth?” (Luke 18:8)

The manner of this question, the use of the negative particle in the Greek demand that the answer shall be in the negative; in other words it is our Lord’s positive and affirmative declaration that when He comes the faith once for all delivered to the saints will have gone from the earth.

In all this, so far from holding out any hope that the Church during His absence would convert the world, the Son of God makes it plain that the Church will fail by the way and the world becoming more and more rebellious to the will of God will become indifferent to and reject the Church.

The apostles corroborate the testimony of the Lord.

The Apostle Paul on his way to Jerusalem summons the elders of Ephesus to meet him at Miletus and warns them that false teachers will arise and seek to draw away disciples after them, perverting the faith; that grievous wolves should enter in, not sparing the flock. (See Acts 20:29)

He writes to Timothy, the young preacher, and warns him the Spirit speaks expressly that in the last times there should be a departure from the faith, a giving heed to wandering spirits and to doctrines preached and proclaimed by demon-inspired teachers. (See I Tim. 4:1)

In the second epistle he affirms the professing Church will be lovers of pleasures more than lovers of God; there will be a *form* of godliness, but a denial of the power (the Holy Ghost); the Church will refuse to listen to sound doctrine, accepting teachers who shall turn them away from the truth. (See II Tim. 3:4,5)

So far from Christianity becoming the dominant fact, at the close of the age there will be a great apostasy, a falling away, a down grade; and while the deity of Christ will be denied and rejected, the deity of man will be exalted and proclaimed.

The Apostle James warns that the professing Church will be guilty of spiritual adultery. Just as a faithless woman yields to her paramour the Church will surrender to the temptation and seduction of the world; and the apostle cries out, "Ye adulterers and adulteresses, know ye not that the friendship of the world is enmity with God? whosoever therefore will be a friend of the world is the enemy of God." (James 4:4)

Peter tells us false teachers should enter the Church, even denying the Lord that bought them, the truth of God should be defamed and many led astray; in the closing hours of the age many would arise in the Church who should mock, laugh at and deride the doctrine of the Second Coming, "And saying, Where is the promise of his coming? for since the fathers fell asleep, all things continue as they were from the beginning of the creation." (II Peter 3:4)

Jude admits that certain men (teachers) had already crept into the churches unawares; and that it would be necessary to contend earnestly for the faith once for all delivered to the saints. (See Jude 3,4)

John says there would arise those who should deny the Lord had ever come in the flesh; still others who should deny He would come back in the flesh; and he joins hands with Paul in testifying that the final characteristic of the age will be, not the Spirit of Christ, but anti-Christ. (See I John 4:2,3; II John 7)

John is arrested by Rome because of his testimony for the Lord. He is banished to the island of Patmos. He receives there a vision of the Lord. The Lord bids him write seven letters to the seven churches of Asia. In these letters he gives His post-mortem testimony concerning the course of the professing Church in the world during His absence, just as He had given His ante-mortem testimony concerning it in the parables recorded in Matthew.

Each of these churches as indicated in the letters represent a stage in the history of the Church at large.

The predicted course it takes through the world is one of departure and final declension.

In *Ephesus* it runs away from first love, from personal devotion to Christ, is taken up with the things of Christ, but not with Christ Himself.

The letter to *Smyrna* announces that Judaizing teachers would enter the Church and endeavor to put them on the ground of law and not grace.

In *Pergamos* the Church turns its back on the hope of the Lord's return, unites itself with the governments of the world, becomes a Church of State and seeks to set up the kingdom of Christ while He is still an absent and rejected king.

In *Thyatira* the Church is seen to be a composite of *Judaism*, *Paganism* and *Apostate Christianity*, teaches works of merit, fills its buildings with images, and leads the people to unite in a worship which though Christian in name is idolatrous in practice.

In *Sardis* the Church sets up a great name, professes to stand for spiritual things, fails to accomplish the work given to it and becomes spiritually dead.

In *Philadelphia* there is a revival of the old faith, the return to a pure Gospel and the hope of the Coming of the Lord.

Laodicea is the last stage of the Church in the world. It has grown great and rich. It is the Church of the people. It is a *world Church*. It has need of nothing. It is not dependent on the Lord. It can carry on its affairs without Him. It is luke-warm. It is indifferent toward Him. He is seen outside of it; He knocks on the door, He is forced to knock that He may gain the attention of the Church. He arraigns it as spiritually blind, naked and poor. He declares He will spew it out of His mouth. He will refuse to own it any longer as His witness in the earth.

You have only to take up history to find the corroboration of this forecast.

It was not long before the Church lost the vitalizing sense of a *personal* Lord. He was out of sight. The clouds of Heaven shut Him from mortal gaze. The Church could neither see nor handle Him. Christians became occupied with *doing* rather than *believing*; doing things for Him, rather than thinking of Him or coming into conscious relationship with Him.

False teachers came out from Jerusalem and sought to put the Gentile converts under law, making circumcision an integral necessity to salvation. Paul's epistle to the Galatians under God, and by the inspiration of the Spirit, is the outgrowth of the endeavor. It is in this epistle he rebukes those who having begun in the spirit seek to be justified or made perfect in the flesh. It is in this epistle he warns that the Christian who puts himself under law has *fallen from grace*.

After the victory at Saxa-Rubra and the Melvin Bridge Constantine, who professed to have seen a cross in the Heavens with the words "By this sign conquer," adopted Christianity as the religion of state. The Church at once lost its vision of Heaven and was filled with the dream of conquest, taking the world for Christ and setting up His Kingdom. Like the mustard tree the Church began to root itself in the earth and was soon invaded by the ambitions, the powers and the works of the flesh. Instead of a simple company of believers walking by faith and waiting for an absent Lord, depending wholly on Him, the Church bloomed with wealth, with outward show and pomp.

The priesthood of Israel was introduced, the temples of the gods were turned into churches, the heathen images were consecrated as saints, the feast days of Paganism were celebrated as feast days with Christian names or titles, the doctrines of Christianity were perverted to suit the demands of the times, other and new doctrines were invented and an apostate and idolatrous Christianity filled the earth until the centuries of its dominance became so dark, so actually black with ignorance and a sensual, ritualistic worship that they are called and known as the "dark ages."

Four hundred years ago under Luther and others a protest was made against Rome and her iniquities. Protestantism arose as an historic schism, professing to stand for the whole Bible and a spiritual Christianity. For a while it threatened to overthrow Rome, then lost much of the ground it had gained, became unspiritual and today, while thoroughly religious and full of fleshly, administrative ability is spiritually dead. Each year it is breaking up into fresh sects. Each year Rome seems to regain new life vigor, aggressiveness, and with an unbroken solidarity is marching steadily forward to the temporal sovereignty foretold of John in the seventeenth of the Revelation, where under the figure of the scarlet clad woman, she rides the symbolic beast of the *revived* Roman Empire.

Within the last century and particularly within the last twenty-five years there have been those who have been awakened to the truth of a pure Gospel, a present salvation and the return of the Lord as the Blessed Hope. This movement has been one of individuals rather than of churches; although, there are assemblies here and there which have placed themselves on record as standing for the faith once for all delivered to the saints.

The last vision of the professing Church is given in the amazing letter to the assembly at Laodicea.

Like Laodicea the professing Church has become a world Church, whether considered in the light of Romanism or viewed as the Protestant section. The Church is rich (not only is Rome rich, but Protestantism, also; that is to say, the wealth of the world is in the hands of professed Christians). The Protestant churches are becoming more and more identified with the civilization of the world, seeking to become more and more a factor in it. Its advanced men repudiate the Bible as the wholly inspired Word of God, make sub-conscious influence the final standard of spiritual authority, and cutting out the eschatology of the Bible, turn their backs on the hereafter, are taken up with this world, the life that now is and seek with fleshy energy to make the world a better world for the natural man to live in, and the natural man a better man to live in the world. Every day the evidence is manifest that the power of the Spirit is being withdrawn and the professing Church being left to its own way.

If the Son of God and His apostles give clear outline of the course of the Church in this world during His absence, they give equally clear and unqualified outline of the course of the world itself and the characteristic finality of the age.

In His last discourse upon the Mount of Olives the Lord draws a startling picture of the things that are to come to pass while He is away.

He announces the battle line will be flung round the circumference of the earth. There shall be wars and rumors of wars. Nation shall rise against nation and kingdom against kingdom. The conflict will be both racial and dynastic. Earthquakes shall shatter the solid ground. Famine and pestilence shall walk hand in hand. Truth smitten

and wounded shall fall in the streets; while the lie, chariot-rolled, shall sweep on its unhindered and unwelcomed way. The Devil will go about, not with hoofs and horns, but transformed as an angel of light. False Christs shall swarm and work miracles which, if it were possible, should deceive the very elect. There shall be distress of nations and world-wide perplexity. The Heavens will seem as though every star had loosened and the unbolted sky would fall. The sea and the waves roaring shall break upon the resounding shores. Men's hearts shall fail them for looking upon the things that are coming on the earth. Lawlessness shall be multiplied and iniquity like a thick and turbid tide rise up and overflow the foundations of the righteous; and that we may in no wise misunderstand the *moral* breakdown of the foreseen hour the Son of God in terrible but incisive words declares, "*And as it was in the days of Noe, so shall it be also in the days of the Son of man.*" "Likewise also as it was in the *days of Lot*. . ." (Luke 17:26,28).

We know what it was in the days of Noah. The earth was filled with sin, iniquity and shame. Violence and lawlessness reigned supreme. Murder was a fine art, vice a virtue. The intents and purposes in the heart of man were evil and evil only, continually. It was a time of civilization, a civilization that builded cities and planted gardens, wrought in brass, constructed organs, instruments of music and had a literature of its own. It was a civilization which for illustration and demonstration might be compared to a man who carries in his hand a bouquet of beautiful and fragrant flowers while he walks in the midst of unspeakable filth and slime whose nauseating depths reach to his waist.

We know what it was in the days of Lot.

We know what it was in that city of Sodom in which to his shame and confusion he dwelt. A city so filled with vice and lust its name has passed current for ages as the concrete expression of all that is unnameable in sin.

And the Son of God, He who is the headquarters of truth, who is the very truth and no lie, says the world in the end of this age will be morally as it was in the days of Noah, as it was in the days of Sodom.

Now and then there are doors opened in our underworld and glimpses given which cause a shudder. From time to time other doors are opened in the upperworld, in the realm and reign of culture, and revelations are given which make it manifest that between the upper and the nether strata there is a common bond of corruption and the unchanged demands of the flesh.

Let the boast go on that the world is growing better and the sudden down-swing of the words of Christ, "As it was in the days of Noe, likewise as it was in the days of Lot," ring over against the baseless boasting as an alarm bell bidding us to know they sleep or deceive who cry, "All is well."

The Apostle Paul lifts up his corroborating note of warning that in the last days there shall be, not peaceful, but *perilous* times, evil men and seducers shall wax worse and worse, deceiving and being deceived. He warns us that at the very moment when men shall be crying peace and safety, at that moment, sudden destruction shall fall upon them as travail upon a woman with child. (See II Tim. 3:1,13; I Thess. 5:3)

James gives a description of the closing hours of our own time which may well make us pause and reflect. There will be those who are specifically designated as "rich" men. They shall, by means of their heaped-up riches ("heaped-up treasures," the Spirit calls them) syndicate and control the affairs and the products of the world. They shall keep back the just wages of the laborer. These wages kept back by "fraud" shall cry aloud in the ears of the God of Sabaoth and demand the thrusting forth of His arm and the smiting of His vengeance. The rich and the poor shall stand facing each other. At the end the hand of violence shall lay hold of the rich, scattering their treasure, while the cry of their anguish goes up to the unanswering skies. (See James 5)

It will be a time of class and mass, of violence and hatred; and when the thought of the "brotherhood of man" shall be only as when a laugh smites against the face of sorrow and pity is turned to mockery.

Peter tells us there will be those who shall walk after the flesh, in the lust of uncleanness, despising government, presumptuous, selfwilled, repudiating dignities and lashing the loosed tongue of scandal. (See II Peter 2:10)

Even though he would speak in the accents of love John cannot hold back the warning which breaks through his speech as he declares foul spirits of evil will go forth to lead the whole world to battle. (Rev. 16:13,14)

No matter from what point you scan the world, whether from the Mount of Olives or the isle of Patmos; from the point of view of the Son of God, or His apostles; whether it be the discourse of the Christ or that of John who lay upon His breast, there is no sign upon the horizon of the angel of peace. In all the winds that blow there is no other

sound than the cries of warring nations, the hiss as of serpents in the way, the jangle and confusion of tongues, anger, hatred, envy and jealousy, the stains of murder, the rising forms of sunless unbelief, the demon figure of infidelity and the *beast* whose manifold names write the word of *blasphemy*.

And yet in the face of these outlines flung forth by the tongue and pen of inspiration men talk of a world moving with cumulative step and Gospel victories to the splendid glory of millennial days.

But not only do Christ and His apostles testify that the Church instead of overcoming and converting the world will be overcome and converted by the world; not only do they testify with unbroken consent that the age in which we live will increase in sin, in wrong, in open unbelief and sinister infidelity, they testify with common accord that the kingdom is to be introduced, not by the preaching of the Gospel, but by *hardening judgments* poured upon the earth, judgments that shall precede and those that shall accompany our Lord Jesus Christ at His Coming; and that it is by His personal appearing and glory the millennial kingdom is at last to be brought in and established.

Our Lord says His Coming shall be, not as when the first sound of a song breaks in harmony on the ear; not as when a smile wreathes the lips of love; nor as when the even tones of peace pronounce a benediction and the hand of greeting gives the touch of grace—No—but—*as it was in the days of Noah*.

As it was in the days of Noah!

And again let it be said, we know how it was in the days of Noah.

The crowd laughed as it went by while Noah preached. Noah builded and preached while the crowd laughed and went by. Each day he builded the growing ark became an increasing condemnation to the careless world.

Then, suddenly, without warning, the Lord called Noah into that finished ark, shut the door, and bolted him in.

For seven days no sound was heard without but the mockery of men and now and then some wonder at the preacher's sudden disappearance.

But after seven days!

Clouds now rose hither and yon. The Heavens bent low over the earth. The upper gates, the gates "above the expanse" were unlocked as when the rings of Saturn should be broken. All the ocean tides of the upper deep poured forth. The fountains of the lowest deeps were broken up. The rain came. The waters descended. The waters rose. They ascended above the high hills. There was only the sullen and awful roar of the waters. The cry of men and beast was lost in the smashing thunder of the rising and the falling and the up-leaping waters, waters that rose and fell and leaped like monster beasts as they might leap and spring and sink their fangs in helpless and in yielding prey. All except those in the ark were swept away. The appeals for help to the silent and pitiless sky, the agony of despair were unheard. There was only the lifted and falling dead, lifted, fallen and flung back by the maddened, resistless, and relentless waters.

And like that He will come.

Suddenly, without warning to the world He will come unseen into the upper air, call the Church into His presence and hold them with Him there secure against any threatened woe.

Then *seven years*, at least, will pass, while a guessing, a bewildered and Devil-led world will discuss the disappearance of the "few."

Seven years! And then as when great beams in a mighty building crack; as when rocks are rifted under driving blasts; as when the solid ground seems to vanish beneath the feet; as when the Heavens above sway and swing as though they turned about the mast-top of a tossing ship, then crash of thunders, each crowding on the other, and lightnings that are as awful as the unmasked face of an executioner about to swing his axe; yea, as when the flood of a long pent-up wrath that is none other than the wrath of God shall burst forth; so will He come to sweep away with the besom of destruction all that is unclean and untoward in that earth He has purchased by His blood.

Then will He set up the kingdom of His righteousness.

As it was in the days of Lot.

And again let it be said, we know what it was in the days of Lot in that Sodom in which he dwelt.

First of all, let it be remembered, if we would read aright the story of Lot, he *looked toward* Sodom. Then he *pitched his tent* toward Sodom. He became a *dweller* in Sodom. He took *office* in Sodom. He went into *politics* in Sodom. He *vexed* his righteous soul in Sodom. (He had vexed it by the filthy conversation of the wicked.) He lost his

testimony in Sodom. Then the Lord sent his angels and snatched His inconsistent and worldly follower from the doomed city. He was snatched out of Sodom at the close of a day—at *eventide*. When the morning broke, it broke in flames, the fires descended and devoured the impossible city.

Like Lot many in the Church are identified with the world. There are those who seek to cleanse it, purify it and make it better. They have lost their testimony. They cannot talk about separation from the world, seeing they have themselves become a part of it. Their testimony produces laughter, not faith, repudiation, not repentance.

Suddenly, the Lord will reach down and snatch them out to meet Him in the air. After that will come the morning. The wrath of God like devouring flames will fall upon a world sunken in sin. The Lord Himself as final judge will come and then—the longed and looked-for kingdom.

The kingdom is introduced by judgments at the Coming of the Lord.

The apostles corroborate the Lord.

The Apostle Paul says He is coming with His mighty angels in flaming fire to take vengeance on those who know not God and who have not obeyed the Gospel. (See II Thess. 1:7,8)

He is coming to find Satan incarnate in the man of sin. With the breath of His lips and the brightness of His presence He will overthrow him and bring in that kingdom in which the Devil and the Devil's man shall be bound beneath His feet for a *thousand years*.

James says the Lord is coming. He is coming as a judge. He already stands, even, at the door. (See James 5:9)

Jude says He is coming with ten thousand of His saints to execute judgment. (See Jude 14,15)

Listen well!

He is coming, not to find a converted world, a world filling the air with songs and hallelujahs to His name.

No!

He is coming to find a world of ungodly sinners, a world filled with hard speeches spoken against God.

Hard speeches!

If all the hard things that have been spoken, the rebel words, the fretful words, words of fault-finding and murmuring uttered against Him; if all the unclean, cursing, obscene words could be gathered together and made to roll down each of the main streets of all the towns in all the world, there would be seen such a tide, such a surging, awful monstrous tide of filth and poison, the spume of serpents and the black, festering of corruption; words leaping up and taking such form that they would appear in all their horror like great clots of gangrene and sickening miasma and fever, by the side of which the *Cloaca Maxima* with its fetid and unceasing stream of pollution of more than twice a thousand years should be as a crystal stream when it breaks beneath a cloudless morning from mountain fastnesses.

He is coming to find a world polluted by six thousand years of indulged sin. He is coming to execute judgment upon it, cleanse it and then set up His millennial kingdom of purity, chastity and righteousness.

What Christ and His apostles say about the introduction of the kingdom the prophets of the Old Testament Scriptures without exception say.

One after another announces that in the latter days the knowledge of the Lord shall cover the earth as waters cover the face of the deep. The Lord will be the King and God of the whole earth.

All the prophets say that.

They look forward and bid us look forward with unstinted faith to that glorious and good time coming when the lion and the lamb shall lie down together; when they shall no more hurt, nor destroy in all the earth.

But how do they predict this glorious kingdom time is to be introduced?

The answer is—*always by judgments* and *never* by the Gospel.

Always, and climacterically, by the *Coming of the Lord*.

The testimony of one prophet may do as a sample of all.

Zephaniah testifies that all shall call upon the name of the Lord and serve Him with one consent.

But when is this to be?

Speaking by the mouth of the prophet the Lord Himself says:

“My determination is to gather the nations (the ten nations of the revised Roman Empire under the last great Kaiser), that I may assemble the kingdoms, to pour upon them mine indignation, even all my fierce anger: for all the earth shall be devoured with the fire of my jealousy. For THEN (mark you that—*after* He has poured out His anger in judgment) will I turn to the people a pure language, that they may all call upon the name of the LORD, to serve him with one consent.” (Zeph. 3:8,9)

Between the last days of the Old Testament and the last days of the New there is the *Second Personal Coming* of the Son of God.

He is away. He is the light of the world. While He is away there will be spiritual darkness and blackness of iniquity. He is Coming. He is coming to smite iniquity, to execute judgment, to dissipate the darkness, then will the kingdom shine forth, and those who are His, in the glory of it.

Judgment and the climacteric, catastrophic Coming of the Son of God—the only way to the millennium.

That is the testimony of Christ Himself.

It is the testimony of the apostles.

It is the unbroken testimony of the prophets.

But now turn to the book of Revelation and read from the sixth chapter to the nineteenth, *fourteen* chapters, a *double seven*.

Turn to these chapters and you will find there a word painting such as can be found in no other literature on earth.

There is the breaking of seals, the sounding of trumpets, thunderings and lightnings, and hail stones weighing hundreds of pounds. Fire flows down from the heavens like a river of scarlet. It burns up the trees and the grasses. The very air is inflamed. The seas are turned to blood. All living things therein die. The rivers and streams and fountains of waters are turned to wormwood. They gave Him wormwood and gall to drink when on the cross, but He would not. Now the waters are turned to the same bitter draught. Those who are thirsty must drink of this bitterness and be maddened with increasing thirst. The sun becomes a great black blot. The moon is turned to a clot of blood as though all the blood of all the battlefields through all the circling years had poured forth into one great deep, indelibly centered spot; as when all curves and all bending lines are at last drawn up and thrown down in one single, final spot. The Heavens are undone and the stars like drunken things go tottering and stumbling in their orbits. Plague and pestilence will run a race with famine. The heat of the sun will be as when the doors of a furnace heated seven times hotter than its usual wont are opened and the flame for a moment beaten down by the draft flies out and fills the air till it seems itself like a circumambient flame. It will be a time of agony, anguish, despair, of tribulation unparalleled and greater than mortal flesh can bear.

Yonder in Europe, in the territory once occupied by Rome the red waves of war are seen lashing the shores of England and then rolling eastward to break with their bloody surge upon the plains of Persia. They swell upward, mount and break with the spume and froth of blood till the Danubian solitudes and German forests are crimson and the fields are full of the tide of war. They recede, they drive downward to the African shores and the yellow sands of the desert. The people revolt. They rise and rush like the rushing of the seas. Out of the tempest and the tossings ten *Democratic* kingdoms are seen (you may read of these ten in the thirteenth and seventeenth chapters). Six of these kingdoms are *west of the Dardenelles*. Four are eastward and *include Persia*.

Forth from the East there comes a figure, a soldier, a conqueror. He sweeps westward. None can make war with him. No matter how many or skillful the combinations against him he breaks through them all. He is superior to all. In mingled despair and adoration the world cries out:

“Who can make war with this wild beast?” (See Rev. 13:4) None can. The ten kings own their helplessness. They elect him king *over all*. He takes the double-headed eagle, the monstrous two-headed and one-bodied bird displayed on the ensigns of Austria, Germany and Russia. He points to the two heads on the *one body*. One head represents the *Western* Empire of Rome. The other the *Eastern* Empire of Rome. He declares the two halves now united in him, one body, one head. *Rome is revived* under this tenfold form. This man symbolized as a *Wild Beast*, the man of frightfulness and terror becomes a *King of kings and Lord of lords*. He is a *devilized and demonized Kaiser*. He rushes eastward. He crosses the Dardenelles. He marches beyond the Taurus. He fights his battles in

Armenia and in Assyria. He turns and rushes through Syria. He overthrows all opposition. He gathers his armies under the walls of Jerusalem. He fills the valley of Jehoshaphat with his troops. His banners float on the very heights of Olivet.

Then comes the climax!

By the inspiration of God the seer of Patmos describes it.

The door in Heaven is opened.

In the fourth chapter it opens that the elect Church may ascend and pass through it into Heaven. It opens just as the door of the ark opened to take in Noah and his family. Just as the door of the marriage chamber was opened to take in the wise virgins.

The door in Heaven is now flung wide open and the Son of God comes forth.

He is riding on a white horse. He has many crowns on His head. His eyes are as a flame of fire. A two-edged sword goes out of His mouth. The hoofs of His horse beat down the slant of Heaven. The hoof beats are the thunders of judgment. Behind Him there ride other horsemen. These are the saints of God, the redeemed of the Lord. There are tens of thousands and ten times thousands of thousands of the angels of God who accompany them. The flaming cherubim and the singing seraphim are there. All the universe is moved at His Coming. Everything is in vibration to the heart of it. The farthest worlds send their hosts. The very movement of them is the unloading of uncounted and immeasurable volts of electricity.

His eyes cause all eyes to look upon Him.

What eyes they are!

They have looked behind the doors of palace and of hut. They have looked behind the doors in the homes of king and cotter, prince and peasant, rich and poor.

These eyes have looked upon sorrow, upon anguish and pain. They have been filled with such tears as He wept by the grave of Lazarus.

These eyes have witnessed scenes of indescribable iniquity, debauchery and sin, from the wild orgies of Babylon, the Messalinian banquets of Rome to the equally shameless festals of our day; and the fire of wrath has been kindled in those eyes.

Those eyes have looked down into the intents and purposes of the heart. They have penetrated to the roots of desire, to impulse and motive.

These eyes are blazing now.

All the pent-up fury of righteous indignation; all the antagonism of holiness to sin is burning as on a brazier where every coal is taken from the depths of God's essential being of holiness. The glances of His eyes flash forth as when lightnings pierce the thick and fetid cloud.

They reveal, they make manifest every secret thought and hidden deed. They scorch. They burn. They wither and consume all that is unclean, unrighteous and untrue.

He is coming to tread the wine press.

He is coming to tread it alone.

The wine press is the earth, the earth in Palestine.

The grapes are the bodies of men.

The juice as it bursts forth and runs red beneath His feet, a red that is a deep, dark red, is the red of the blood of the arteries of men.

And this blood will run a stream sixteen hundred furlongs in length.

He is coming, not with an olive branch, but with a rod of iron.

He is coming, not to touch the earth as softly as a kiss on upturned and waiting lips.

Nay! Not with a kiss is He Coming, but to smite the earth which gave Him a cross of wood, a crown of thorns and a borrowed grave.

He has not forgotten and the earth shall terribly *remember*.

And why is He Coming in this fashion?

And what will He find when He comes?

Will He find a world whose swords have been beaten into plough shares and whose spears have been beaten into pruning hooks?

Will He find a world where uncounted church spires point to Heaven and where church bells are ringing to bid Him welcome?

Will He find the inhabitants of the earth standing like white robed choirs singing hosannas to His name and casting garlands of welcoming praise at His feet, every voice bidding Him come?

Nay! Nay! and alas, Nay!

He will find a world arrayed in organized rebellion against Him, ready to deny, reject, and if needs be, crucify Him. A world filled with the shouting of the captains, with the voice of philosophy, the assaults of science, the treason of those who should be His ambassadors. He will find human genius in partnership with the powers of darkness against Him.

In short, a rebel world will rise up with all the insolence of its unbelief and senseless infidelity to defy Him.

Devil duped and Devil led the world of human culture, human progress will fling itself against the bosses of Jehovah's buckler.

Then will He smite as when the delayed lightning falls.

He overthrows the armies of the Beast.

He scatters them as the leaves of autumn are scattered by the windy blast.

He binds Satan in the pit.

He shuts him up for a *thousand years*.

And THEN—

And NOT TILL THEN, does the kingdom of the thousand years begin.

O that I had the genius of a supreme artist, I would paint this picture in such a fashion that the blindest and most self-determined post-millennialist could not fail to see the truth.

Take up this nineteenth chapter of the Revelation and read it.

Let the scene paint itself before your very eyes.

Christ and His saints coming down those heavens.

The world in rebellion and banded iniquity before Him.

He executes judgment against this organized system.

He overthrows it.

He binds the Devil.

Then He sets up the kingdom and those who are His, and come with Him, reign with Him a thousand years.

He comes *first*.

He comes *before* the thousand years.

He comes before the *millennium* therefore.

A child can see that.

He comes in visible glory.

Accept all the figures, make them as figurative and symbolical as you like, and then after you have done all that you face the fact that away back yonder under the star-studded sky of Judea, on that last night of the Supper He said:

"I WILL COME AGAIN."

Not "My Spirit;" not a phantom of Himself; not some emanation of Himself, but as Paul dynamically says:

“THE LORD HIMSELF.” (1 Thess. 4:16)

All this reality, personality and promised visibility are back of, supporting and sustaining all the figurative and symbolic color you may see fit to crowd into and upon this descriptive chapter.

Whatever else you may see, you must see that the Lord is coming out in glory and that the millennium *comes after He comes*.

And it is not begging the question to say this. Put it in any shape you like, twist it into all the spiritualized vacuity you please, the fact remains that He is represented in the words of Holy Writ as *Coming First*, and the millennium—*Second*.

Thus God writes PRE-MILLENNIALISM in the colors and forms and figures of these nineteenth and twentieth chapters of the Revelation.

The book shows us the professing Church going from *departure* to *repudiation*.

It shows us the *true* Church inside the professing Church separated from the great mass of meaningless profession, caught up to Heaven and enthroned in power.

It gives us the record of fourteen chapters of *hell on earth*, the marriage supper in the nineteenth, the Coming forth in visible splendor in open glory, in executive judgment—

AND THEN.

And then—What?

Satan bound, the kingdom set up, the *millennium begun*.

What shall be said of men who with an open Bible before them, with the unbroken testimony of Holy Scripture that there can be no millennium till Christ comes, that He must come *before* the millennium comes; that parable and figure and symbol and definite discourse demonstrate and prove that He must so come; that His Coming is *pre-millennial*; what shall be said of men, of teachers who in the face of all this teach the world is to be converted by the Gospel and the millennium run its course of peace before Christ can come; that the world is growing every day spiritually better?

What shall be said of men who as the globe turns from night to day and finds the red line of war meeting each sunrise; who in an hour when the banner of a boasted civilization has been torn to shreds and every standard of righteousness and truth is being trampled in the mire and mud and red slime of an unchecked barbarism; who in an hour when Belgian women and children lie quivering and helpless under the heel of self-vaunted supermen; when women are worse than slain and children mutilated; when art and refinement and all highest human culture are made to give way to the genius of war and the demon of destruction; what shall be said of men who with all this piled-up heap of undeniable testimony, preach the world is to be and now is being converted by the Gospel and the millennium as consequent set up; who deliberately and in the face of the inspired Word of God, banish the Son of God from the threshold of the earth, from nearness to the Church and give Him a horizon on which to appear, a horizon remote with the remoteness of a thousand years after a converted world, *a conversion for which there is not a single promise* from one end of Scripture to the other.

What can you say of such teachers?

Allowing charity to dictate the terms the most conservative and conceding thing you can say is that they are blind leaders of the blind.

I say unto you, post-millennialism is the dry rot in theological exposition. It is a teaching whose collocation of terms are words without knowledge. It is this pre-determined concept that the world must be converted by the Gospel which formulates the theology of the schools. It is this pre-determined and so-called optimism of human invention which sends the young seminary graduate out to better a world system which God has judged; which carries him down from the ground of the supernatural to the natural; which leads him to lose sight of the age to come in the uninspired endeavor to set up the kingdom of Christ in a world which rejected Him and where the shadow of His cross still falls as the shadow of an unexpiated crime.

It is this post-millennialism which is absolutely without the very first principle of Biblical exegesis, which denies the very first law of a sane exegesis, “rightly dividing the word of truth;” (II Tim. 2:15) it is this utter lack of exegesis which is the bane of post-millennialism, giving to Scripture the propositions it never makes, the theological formulae which have no basis, leading men to expect results which are never achieved, reacting upon

the enthusiasm of the Church and taking away from it the only hope which can warrant it to look beyond the warring nations, beyond the hideous face of infidelity, the snarl of doubt and all the in rushing tide of mere religiousness and all enslaving materialism to that moment when He who is both God and man shall come by right of creative power and redemptive blood to take His own world to Himself and reign and rule in it for God and men.

Post-millennialism ought to be repudiated by the Church.

The Church ought to awake, arouse, and searching Holy Scripture make it impossible for such teaching to find a foothold.

I exhort you as Christians to awake.

Christ is Coming! Every day bears witness the age is drawing to an end, and to an end predicted and warned of God. Your opportunities to serve Him here in the hour of His rejection are passing. You cannot afford to stand still. Some of you are not as near nor in such fellowship and communion with Him as you were a week ago. You are allowing yourselves to drift. The comfort and the joy which should be yours in Christ you do not have. You are rapidly becoming like the one in Sardis, having *a name to live and yet dead*—spiritually dead. How many have you brought to Christ in a week, a month, a year? If the Lord should come tonight and take you within the upper gates would you pass all your eternity without being able to find one soul whom you had led to Him or brought to Heaven? What an eternal sense of selfishness would be yours; and how your empty handedness may be the back sweep of an eternal regret emphasized in proportion to your own selfish enjoyment there.

I would exhort you while you have time, to arouse and make your calling and election sure. Not all who say, "Lord, Lord," shall enter in, even though they may have done great and notable things in His name.

You have no time to lose, Christ is Coming. Let me exhort you who are unsaved to turn and take the salvation which is now so freely offered you. Let me exhort you to awake before the trumpet sounds. The Lord is Coming. Any moment He may come and snatch the Church away and shut you out to the smiting of His eternal wrath.

But even while I invite you to come, I lift up my voice and utter this prayer:

"Accomplish, O Lord, the number of Thine elect; get through the preaching of Thy Gospel those who shall be eternally Thine. Come, execute Thy righteous judgment, make clean this sin-stained, tear-drenched earth and bring in the glad millennial day. Come, Lord, come and tarry not; for every day every need of the earth is ever crying—*'Come.'*"

IV
THE SECRET AND IMMINENT COMING OF CHRIST

The Secret and Imminent Coming of Christ

BEHOLD I come as a thief. . ." (Rev. 16:15).

"Behold he cometh with clouds; and every eye shall see him. . ." (Rev. 1:7).

In the first text the Coming of our Lord Jesus Christ is compared to that of a thief who comes secretly and of course unseen. The other is a declaration that He will come publicly and be visible to all.

The texts appear to contradict each other. Actually, they do not. Each is the description of a distinctive part of the Second Coming. The Second Coming of Christ has two well defined parts. In the one He comes secretly *for* His Church. In the other He comes publicly *with* His Church.

In presenting the theme I shall follow three lines of development:

The Second Coming of our Lord Jesus Christ while one great event is twofold in order: He will come *for* His Church and after an interval *with* His Church.

The Coming of our Lord Jesus Christ *for* the Church will be *secret* and is *imminent*.

As a Church we are to wait and be ready for the secret, and imminent Coming of the Lord.

I. The Second Coming of our Lord Jesus Christ while one great event, is twofold in order. He will come FOR His Church and after an interval WITH His Church.

The twofold order of the Second Coming is set forth in type, symbol, parable, construction of Scripture, specially inspired words, direct declaration and scenic illustration.

It is set forth in such typical personal figures as *Enoch, Noah, Lot, Joseph, Moses* and *Zipporah*.

Enoch lived at a time antecedent to the flood when the sin, the iniquity and shame of the world rolled the slush and the slime of the festering, thick waves of an indescribable materialism over every possible foundation of righteousness. It was a time of lawlessness, lechery, measureless violence and—civilization, a civilization founded by Cain and set up in the blood of his murdered brother.

Although living in the midst of this civilization, violence, crime and lust; in an environment that made an appeal through every avenue of the senses to the flesh and to its innate desires for gratification, *Enoch* walked apart from it all. He lived, not merely a negative life, refusing to have fellowship with the world and walking apart from it; but, on the contrary, made his walk a positive and aggressive testimony against it; for *three hundred years*, which eventually swept all but eight persons into the uprising and irresistible tide of evil, he *walked with God*, went on with God, in God's way, taken up with the things of God, holding converse and intimate communion with God, pleasing God at every step till, at last, one day, he walked on so far and intimately with Him he found himself, suddenly, and without dying, in Heaven with God.

The Lord had translated Enoch from earth to Heaven.

The Church has been set up of God in a world of sin, a world which in proportion as it shall increase in knowledge, in wisdom, in culture and civilization, will repudiate the mind and thought of God and refuse to walk in His way.

The Church is not here to modify human nature, become a factor in its civilization, make the world a better world for the natural man to live in, or make the natural man a better man to live in the world.

The very name and title of the Church repudiate such an idea. The word, "church" signifies in its root meaning a body of persons called out and separated from the world, separated from it as a system whose principles and way are not the principles and way of the Spirit, but of the flesh.

By its constitution and calling the Church is here to protest against the world, and no matter how refined and beautiful that world may become, no matter how efficient as a system, to protest against it and refuse its civilization.

The Church like *Enoch* is to walk the path of separation, to walk with God, to be taken up with the things of God and to live such a heavenly life, a life of obedience and guidance by the Spirit, that man shall see in that Church the

manifestation and revelation of God, and receive from it the impact of divine power and presence; in short, the Church is here to be a spiritual light in spiritual darkness, and the voice of God warning the world against the evil of its way, the certainty of coming judgment and inviting men to faith in a crucified and risen Christ as the only path by which the sons of men may find the Fatherhood of God and life eternal.

The course of the Church has its limit. Christianity was never intended to be permanent in the world. Like Enoch the Church will be translated, the dead in Christ will be raised, the living will be changed and together caught up to meet the Lord. The Church will be taken into the place the Lord has gone to prepare and will be at home in Heaven with Him.

Noah was a preacher of righteousness. The Spirit was his coadjutor. For one hundred and twenty years he strove with men. Under detailed instructions from the Lord he builded an ark for the saving of his household. It was a warning that God was about to judge the world, to smite it for its sin, its violence and crime. It was a condemnation of the world, a definite declaration that the end of all flesh had come before Him. He was through with it. He had no longer any hope in it. He could no longer be patient with it and would sweep it away. Every hammer stroke driving a nail, every sound of building and construction in the ark was an accent, an emphasis of God's condemnation against the world. At the same time, the open door was a daily invitation to flee from the wrath to come, to find shelter and security in the way of salvation which God Himself had provided.

One day, without warning, the Lord called Noah and his family into the ark, closed the door and *shut them in*. Seven days passed, days ominous in their silence, a silence broken only by the discordant laughter of men and the mocking questions concerning the sudden disappearance of the woe burdened preacher and his family. Then there was the crash as of opening gates in Heaven, the uprush as of loosened fountains in the deep, and the flood in all its limitless fury and desolating power was upon the earth.

The Church is here like Noah to condemn the world, to testify against it. The foundation fact of Christian experience condemns it. The foundation fact of genuine Christian experience is regeneration. The fact of regeneration is the declaration that no matter how well born you may be the first time you can not enter into fellowship and peace with God unless you are born the second time. Each church building, if the Church be true to the faith which warranted the building, is a proclamation to every passerby that the old nature of the flesh is repudiated of God; that no matter what effort may be made to cultivate or purify that nature of flesh, God has set it aside and set it aside forever.

The Church is here, like Noah, as a warning. It is here to arouse men from the sleep, from the torpor, of self-gratification and satisfied self-righteousness; here to cry aloud that men must flee from the wrath to come. Each Christian church building should be like a danger signal, a red light in the growing spiritual darkness. At the same time the Church should be an abiding invitation, calling out to the careless passerby, bidding him to enter by the open door of faith to find in the risen and living Christ the way of salvation which God Himself has provided.

But some day, unknown to the world, and an equal surprise to the Church, the Lord unseen will descend into the upper air and through an opened door in Heaven, and at the sound of a trump, call the Church into the place prepared, close the door and shut His saints within, keeping them there above the coming storm. Seven years at least will pass. Ominous will be the silence of Heaven and derisory the laughter of men at the disappearance, not of a multitude, but of the relatively few. Seven years in which evil unrestrained shall head itself up in blasphemous mockery and open assault against God and His Christ. Then there will be a crash as when flying worlds collide and foundations are destroyed. The heavens shall seem aflame, the earth on fire, and the Son of God shall be seen coming in the clouds of heaven with all His holy angels and all His saints to execute His long-waiting judgment upon the ungodly and the sinner. The flood of His pent-up wrath shall break and the earth shall be swept clean of its stain of shame and guilt, the kingdom of righteousness shall be established and the Lord shall be King over all the earth.

Thus the Coming of Christ will be twofold.

Like Noah, the Church will be called of the Lord into the place prepared. After an interval, and as when the flood fell, the Lord will descend with all His saints to execute judgment and establish righteousness in the earth.

He will come *for* the Church and then *with* the Church.

The story of Lot is equally suggestive.

Lot is an historical fact and a typical and prophetic figure.

He *looked* toward Sodom, *pitched* his tent toward Sodom, took *office* in Sodom, *vexed* his righteous soul with the filthy conversation of those who lived in Sodom and then *lost his testimony in Sodom*.

The angels of God came suddenly one day as it drew on toward evening, laid hands on him as the night deepened and snatched him out of Sodom. In the morning as the dawn broke the fire out of Heaven fell upon the guilty, vice-laden and shame-stained city, consuming all that Lot with painful toil had accumulated and builded in Sodom.

Lot represents that side of the professing Church which is bound up and identified with the world; that side of the Church which seeks to clean up, purify and make the world better; that side of the Church which is down on the ground, has ceased to be a pilgrim and a stranger in the earth, has become a dweller therein, is joining hands with the world to help it, to Christianize it and make it acceptable to God; that side of the Church which has lost all spiritual testimony, fails to have the true vision of God, mixes flesh and spirit, law and grace, the righteousness of man and the righteousness of God, enters into partnership with all secular ministrations, and forgetting that the judgment of God hangs as a suspended doom over the world, fancies that the world which slew Christ and repudiates His Gospel can be lured into the kingdom of God by open and unhesitating appeals to the flesh.

Everywhere you will find Churches whose buildings are filled with all instrumentalities for the culture of the flesh, gymnasia, swimming pools, reading rooms full of the latest novels, entertainment bureaus; church buildings which are headquarters for boy scouts, literary societies, clubs, employment agencies; churches which seek through pleasing of the *flesh to take away the offense of the Cross* and by coordination with the things of this world to lead men into accepting the antagonistic and flesh contradicting things of God.

Lot represents that side of the Church which is endeavoring to build wood, hay and stubble on the foundation of Christ; that side of the Church which is vexed every day with the increasing sinfulness, mockery and materialism of the world and fools itself with the vain hope that by using worldly means, fleshly methods and “up-to-date” ideas it may make men friends of that God who through the lips of a chosen apostle has testified that they who are in the flesh, who walk in the flesh, who are governed by the very best and so-called sanest principles and practices of the flesh— “cannot please God.” (Rom. 8:8)

But suddenly the Lord will come. He will snatch the Church up out of the world. He will take even those who constitute the worldly side of the Church and like Lot have been spiritually blind enough to think they could clean Sodom; they will be taken because if they be in truth and reality actually regenerate, with all their blindness and fleshly mixtures they are still in the bond of the covenant. He will take them out of the world and up to Himself. After that, after they have been clean snatched out of the world will the Lord sweep down as with the besom of destruction, overthrowing and destroying not only all the art, the culture, the pride and refinement of the natural man, but all the organized effort the Church has made to gild, to paint, to decorate and make attractive that lecherous world whose sin and iniquity remain open to the gaze of Him with whom we have to do.

Lot was *saved out* of Sodom by being *burned out* of Sodom.

He was saved “*so as by fire*.” (1 Cor. 3:15)

The Coming of Christ and the taking of the Church will be to some Christians like a disaster, it will be wrenching them loose from their rootage in the earth. They will be as those who are saved out of and through a great fire, but have had all their goods burned up.

But mark it well! The Lord said He could do nothing till Lot himself should be come out of the city. He could not and would not burn it up till Lot was safe outside.

Lot *in Sodom* was the only thing that stood between Sodom and the fire of God.

And here indeed is the amazing and certain truth:

In spite of its inconsistencies and worldliness the Church is the only barrier between the world and the judgment—wrath of God.

The Church is as the salt of the earth. It alone saves the world from utter corruption. It alone saves it from the downpour of the fire of God. The value of the salt, that which gives it pungency and power is the savor. The savor of the Church, the final deposit which makes it as salt is the indwelling presence of the Holy Spirit.

After the Lord had caused Lot to be snatched out of Sodom the fire fell. After the Church shall be taken up to meet the Lord the judgment of God will fall.

The action at Sodom was twofold.

The Lord came on the mount and by angelic power took Lot out of Sodom. In the morning He came over Sodom and poured His judgments upon it, and poured them forth out of the full cup of His indignation.

The Lord will come into the air *for* His Church; then, later on, He will come *with* His translated and ascended Church in judgment on the world.

Joseph was rejected by his brethren, sold into Egypt, after various dramatic and providential experiences became co-ruler with the king, took to himself a Gentile wife, and brought her into his palace. Then famine, sorrow and bitter tribulation fell upon his father's house, upon the brethren who had so cruelly betrayed and sold him. After allowing them to suffer for a season the providential penalty of their blindness and sin and to endure a short but sharp tribulation, he took his wife, entered his chariot accompanied by his resplendent guards, revealed himself in all his fulness and royal dignity to his repentant brethren and established them in the land of Goshen, the land promised by the king, the promised land in Egypt.

Joseph first took his wife into his palace, into the place prepared for her, took her to himself, and then came forth with her in the glory of his kingly splendor and established his brethren in the coveted land.

Our Lord Jesus Christ was rejected by His brethren. They sold Him as Joseph's brethren sold him, into alien hands. For two thousand years he has been an exile from this world. God the Father has taken Him into associated rulership with Himself upon the Heavenly throne. During these years of His exile He has been getting a bride from among the Gentiles. He is obtaining that bride through the preaching of the Gospel and the quickening and convicting call of the Spirit.

Some day He will descend into the region just above the confines of our earth. He will call the Church as His affianced bride (the dead raised, the living changed) into that star-set home He so long ago went to prepare. There His banner over her shall be love. When the Church goes from the earth the Lord's dealings with His brethren in the flesh will begin. Famine, sorrow, the anguish of the Great Tribulation shall come upon them (they will in the meantime have returned to their own land). At a given moment He will come forth with His Church as His married wife. He will come forth in His chariot and surrounded by ten thousand times ten thousand chariots of glory. He will make Himself known to His brethren. They will repent at the sight of Him and own Him as their once rejected Lord. He will reveal Himself to them fully and establish them in the land which is theirs and His, the land of the covenant promise.

The Coming of Christ is like that of Joseph. As Joseph sought his bride, came for her, then took her into his palace and afterward came with her in his glory, sharing it with her, so the Lord will come, first *for* His Church and then *with* her.

The Coming of our Lord Jesus Christ is illustrated and avouched as twofold.

Moses, like Joseph, took a Gentile wife. The Lord representing the law sought to slay him till his wife circumcised their son. When she had done this she called him her "bloody husband." (Exod. 4:25,26)

Before Moses entered Egypt to execute the judgments of God upon Pharaoh and the land he sent his wife back and took her into the inn where she had been led to announce him as her bloody husband. An inn is the stopping place for pilgrims and travellers. When the judgments of God had been executed upon Egypt Moses came with his wife and the delivered Children of Israel to the Mount of God and the glory of the divine presence.

Let it be noted, Moses *first* came *for* his wife, and then *with* her in the hour of deliverance and glory.

Our Lord Jesus Christ is to the Church, indeed, a bloody husband, a husband by blood; but the blood is His own, the blood which He shed to deliver us from the penalty of death; and, at the same time, the blood by which He purchased us for His own. The blood of the Cross is the dowry which He has brought to the Church, the seal of His love for her, and the crimson seal of her union with Him.

Before He descends to execute His judgments upon a gainsaying world; before He descends to enter into judgment with and overthrow that anti-Christ of whom Pharaoh is the fitting type; before He flings His hardening judgments on the earth, He will call His Church up to meet Him. He will take her into the inn. He will take her up as one who was called to be a traveller, a pilgrim and a stranger in the earth. He will put her in the resting place He has prepared. Then, after He has executed His judgments and delivered the elect remnant in Israel He will come with His Church to the Mount of God, even to the Mount of Olives, and thence to Mount Zion and reign gloriously

“before His saints.”

The Coming of the Lord is twofold.

The twofold Coming is set forth by *symbols*.

It is symbolized by the coming of a thief.

We know how a thief comes.

He comes at even, between the dark of midnight and the gray of morn. He comes with unsandaled feet, silently, suddenly, softly. He comes while all are asleep, when no one is watching. He comes to steal the treasure. The household awakes in the morning. The thief has come. He has taken the treasure *and is gone*.

So, between the midnight and the morn our Lord will come. He will come softly, silently, suddenly. He will come when none are thinking about Him. When all are asleep and wholly unwatching. He is coming to steal a treasure. He is coming to snatch away a pearl of great price and get that jewel of all jewels as His; but His so-called stealing is not stealing. He comes with the silence and the unwarning step of a thief; but He is coming to take His own. *The pearl is the Church*. It is a pearl of *great price*. A price so great you have no values on earth with which to measure or compare it. There is a pearl lying down deep and buried in the slime of the undertow and tangled weeds at the bottom of the sea. A man throws aside his garments. He divests himself. He leaps, he plunges into the far descending deeps, down and down. He lays his hand upon the imbedded pearl. He brings it up. There is no beauty in it. He gives it to the burnisher. He spends his labor and artful care upon it. He sets it in a rim of gold. It flashes white and spotless, soft as incrustated moon light. It is fastened in the diadem of a king. It is worn on the day of his crowning. The price is put upon it. It had none itself as it lay there wrapped and stained and dull in the depths of the sea. The price of it is brought out of the down plunge of him who took his life into the dark under the swelling tide. The price of it is accumulated and made beyond measure by the place it holds in the diadem upon the king's brow.

Such is the Church.

As individual believers we contribute to and constitute the Church. Like the pearl we individually lay in the depths of the tide of sin. The Son of God disrobed Himself. He divested Himself of His form and appearing as God. He plunged downward and still downward into the depths until the billows of sin, your sin and mine, rolled over Him on the Cross. Then He found us. He laid hands upon us. He lifted us up. He has given us to the One who could polish us and make us gleam, the Holy Spirit. He has burnished us on the wheels and rims of circumstance. We have in us and shining out of us a light that is as the moonlight. Moonlight is reflected sunlight. The light in us is the reflection of Himself. We are His individually, but when massed and viewed together we form the pearl of great price. The price was put upon us. We had none in ourselves as we lay wrapped and stained and dull in the deeps of sin and the tangled ways of sin. The price at which we are valued was brought out of the down plunge of Him who took His life under the dark and swelling tide that rolled over Him on the Cross. We are the most costly things in the universe of God. We cost the heart-break of God, the agony, the blood and the death of God—even that God manifest in the flesh and nailed to the Cross for us. The price put upon us is cumulative and will find its excess which no adjective can qualify in that hour when He shall wear us forth as the perfect jewel of His perfect crown.

Surely the Church is the pearl of great price.

And He is coming to take that jewel out of the world. He will take it that He may wear it in the diadem of His glory.

The world will awake and discover the Lord has come, taken the Church *and gone*.

Then for the first time will a sordid world awake and arouse to the worth and value of the Church.

The Coming of the Lord is symbolized by the lightning.

Many years ago I was pastor of a church in the country, yonder amid the southern Pennsylvania hills. It was a summer night, the night of a close and sultry day. The air grew heavier and the night blacker than any raven's wing. I drove steadily. As my horse's feet and the wheels of my light wagon echoed in the old fashioned covered bridge spanning the river between me and my home, the gathering storm broke. There was a flash of lightning which seemed to split the sky in half. In a moment I saw the hill top, every tree and rock. Through an opening in the side of the bridge I could see the stream leaping, dashing over rock and stone and like a frightened thing under the smiting and pelting of the rain and the crying of the winds, leaping again with greater bounds and breaking into

whitest foam against the lower shore; every detail was visible even to the rusty nails in the beams of the bridge. My horse cowered and sunk between the shafts. Then Heaven and earth seemed suddenly to come together in one deafening roar and multiplied echoing crash.

Like that the Son of God will come.

There will be the lighting down of His glory. It will illuminate the earth, not only the hills and vales, but will pour down the flood light of its revelation into the intent and purpose of every heart.

He is coming *as a thief* comes, unawares and in the silent night, for His Church.

He is coming *as the lightning* in the splendor and effulgence of His glory *with* His Church.

The Coming of Christ is compared to the morning star and the rising sun.

He Himself says He is the bright and morning star.

The prophet Malachi says He will arise as the sun of righteousness with healing in His wings.

The star comes before sunrise.

This year, as often before, while in the mountains I took occasion to watch the morning star, and near the hour of dawn.

It hung suspended in the upper skies like a lamp of liquid light. Sometimes it seemed like a melting diamond, elongating and ready to drop. Anon, it was as though an angel's tear were ready to fall upon a world of tears.

The mountains stood in dim and ghostly outline. The road slipped by white and straight. In the distance I heard the bark of a dog and the clarion note of chancicleer. Then a human figure passed swiftly on and was absorbed in the mysterious vagueness of the hour.

It was a time of silence and waiting.

Lower and lower sank the star as though an invisible hand were letting out instalments of an unseen chain, and then, suddenly, without warning, it dropped behind the etched outline of the mountain's westernmost ridge.

There remained a while of continued watching.

There was fascination in it. To wait and watch, still watch and note the Coming Change.

Presently in the east a lifting as though the sky itself were rising in a strip of light. Then streams of light. Then arrows shooting upward to the zenith, arrows tipped as with flame of fire. After that as though an army with banners of crimson and amethyst and purple were rushing on in an assault of riotous color. Suddenly, a great rim of glowing, scintillating red gold against the sky's edge; and then steadily thrusting upward the wheel of the chariot of day and the sun ascending to his place to reign and rule. Now his beams were upon the eyelids and the laggards awoke—but *the star was gone*.

Our Lord is Coming as the star comes before the hour of sunrise, before the day breaks in its fulness.

He is coming quietly and softly for His Church.

Those who are His will ascend to meet Him.

Then with them He will disappear from the region of the earth.

But star rise is *prelude* to sunrise. As the sun in all His glory He will break upon the view. The light of His splendor will fill the earth. He will come to reign and rule, and all the earth shall behold Him in His majesty and might.

He is coming *for* His Church.

He will come *with* His Church.

The twofold Coming of our Lord Jesus Christ is illustrated in parable.

It is illustrated in the parable of the Bridegroom and the Virgins.

Ten virgins go out to meet the bridegroom. While he tarries they all fall asleep. At midnight they are awakened by the warning cry that he is coming. Five of the virgins are without oil for their lamps which they find are going out. They can not borrow. They go to buy. While they are gone the bridegroom comes, and they that are ready go in with him to the marriage and the door is shut. In the morning the bride and bridegroom go forth to enter upon the bridegroom's domain and there to reign and rule over his servants.

Our Lord Jesus Christ is coming for His Church, not as a king to rule over her, but as the Bridegroom of her heart; as He who has loved her with an everlasting love from before the foundation of the earth. He is coming to take her as His Bride into the place prepared. Then, in the morning, in all the radiance and wonder of its dawning, He will come forth with her to reign and rule as King of kings and Lord of lords in the wide domain of His righteousness and truth.

The twofold Coming of Christ is set forth in the Construction of Scripture.

It is set forth in the twenty-fifth chapter of Matthew.

In the first part of the chapter our Lord comes *as a Bridegroom*.

In the second part He comes *as a King*.

In the first part He comes to meet *virgins*.

In the second part He comes to meet *nations*.

In the first part He comes to a *marriage chamber*.

In the second He comes to a *Judgment throne*.

In the first part He comes *to be married*.

In the second He comes *to execute judgment*.

In the first He comes at *night*.

In the second He comes in the *morning hour*.

The twofold Coming of our Lord Jesus Christ is proclaimed by two distinct and specially inspired words.

The words are Greek words: *Epiphaneia* and *Parousia*.

Parousia signifies, "presence."

Epiphaneia is "manifestation."

The two words may be found in a single text.

"And then shall that Wicked be revealed, whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shall destroy with the *brightness of his coming*;" (II Thess. 2:8).

The words "brightness" and "coming," are respectively, the words, *Epiphaneia* and *Parousia*.

The verse therefore should be rendered:

"Whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of His mouth, and shall destroy with *the brightness or manifestation of His presence*."

Before manifestation the presence is there, but unmanifested, unknown, secret.

The Lord is coming down *into the air* for His Church.

After an interval He will come *down to the earth* with His Church.

His *presence* for the Church will not be manifested to the world.

The world will no more see Him or be aware of His Coming for the Church than when He ascended *from* the Church at Olivet.

When He comes *with His Church*, He will come in the clouds of Heaven.

His presence will then be manifested to every eye.

The two words selected by the Holy Spirit testify that the Second Coming of our Lord Jesus Christ while one great event is twofold in development.

This twofold Coming of Christ is dynamically taught in the direct statement of Holy Scripture.

In Saint Paul's first *Epistle to the Thessalonians* and in the *fourth* chapter he tells us the Lord is coming down into the air with a shout, with the voice of the archangel and the trump of God; that the dead in Christ shall rise first, then the living who remain shall be caught up with them in clouds to meet the Lord in the air. And let it be noted and remembered well that this verb, "to meet," has in it the idea, not only of meeting, but *returning*; as though the Lord were on His way to the earth and the Church had gone up to meet Him halfway that she might

come back with Him.

If you will turn to the *fourteenth chapter* of the prophet *Zechariah* you will see that Jerusalem is surrounded by Gentile armies, the city is taken, the houses rifled, the women ravished, half the population taken captive, the other half cut off from the city; then the Lord and all His saints suddenly descend from Heaven in manifested glory, overthrow the allied armies and the feet of the Lord stand on the Mount of Olives; and in order that we may see this Coming is not spiritual or symbolic, it is added that this Mount of Olives is on the *east* before Jerusalem.

Now it is evident the Lord must come down into the air before He can come to the Mount of Olives; and, as in his letter to the Thessalonians Paul represents the Lord as coming into the air *for* His Church, and the Church is seen *going up* into the air to meet Him with the idea of *returning*; and in his prophecy, Zechariah says the Lord is coming with all His saints to the Mount of Olives, it follows irresistibly that *the Coming into the air for the Church precedes* the Coming to the mount, and that this Coming to the mount is none other than Christ coming in manifested glory with His Church.

The going up into the air to meet the Lord has nothing to do with the Jews, with Jerusalem nor the world, it has to do *exclusively* with the *Church*.

The coming down to the mount has to do with the Jew, with Jerusalem and the Gentile world.

Thus the apostle Paul and the prophet Zechariah testify the Second Coming of our Lord Jesus Christ is twofold, and that the first part concerns only those who are in Christ; while the second part is unmistakably related to Israel and the world.

In Saint Paul's *Second Epistle to the Thessalonians* and in the *first chapter* we learn the Lord is coming with all His angels in flaming fire to take vengeance on those who know not God and who obey not the Gospel. These are to be punished with everlasting destruction from the presence of God and the glory of His power, *when He shall come to be glorified in His saints*.

This latter expression as italicized is in the future tense; but it is the subjunctive aorist and could be rendered:

"When He *shall have come* to be glorified in His saints."

That is to say, the Lord will not be revealed with His angels in flaming fire and taking vengeance *till after He has come and has been glorified in His saints*.

He must come and be glorified in His saints before He can be revealed in the glory of His angels.

There is one supreme way only in which He can come and be glorified in His saints, and that is, when He comes to raise the dead who died in His name and transfigure the living.

And this Coming and glorification is described in the *fourth chapter* of the *First Thessalonians* where the Lord descends into the air to meet His Church. Thus in his *second* epistle Paul elaborates the *first* and teaches in unquestionable clearness that the Coming of the Lord is twofold.

The twofold Coming is announced in the *second chapter* of the *Second Thessalonians* where the Apostle in the first part of the chapter beseeches them by the Coming of the Lord (the word "coming" here is *parousia*) and by *our gathering together unto Him*.

This is his definition of, and inspired terminology concerning, the Second Coming as presented in the *fourth chapter* of the *First Thessalonians*.

According to this inspired definition the Coming of Christ *for* His Church is His unmanifested presence to the world in the air; and *the going up of the Church to meet Him* is, ". . . OUR GATHERING TOGETHER UNTO HIM." (II Thess. 2:1)

"*Our gathering together unto Him*," is therefore the Scriptural and inspired title of the *first part* of our Lord's Second Coming.

In the latter part of the chapter the apostle announces the Lord is coming to overthrow the man of sin, the son of perdition. He will consume him with the spirit of His mouth and destroy him with the brightness (manifestation) of His Coming (presence).

This Coming to overthrow the man of sin is then after the Church shall have been gathered up into the air to meet Him, and coincides with that Coming of which Zechariah speaks when he declares the Lord shall come with all His saints.

Thus the Coming of Christ is twofold. It has two distinct parts.

In the first part He comes into the air and the Church is caught up to meet Him.

In the second part He comes with the Church to overthrow Anti-Christ and set up His kingdom.

The twofold Coming of Christ is finally demonstrated and proved by the scenic construction and dramatic illustration of THE BOOK OF REVELATION.

In the *fourth* chapter John is caught up at the sound of a trumpet-like voice through an open door in Heaven. Immediately he beholds twenty-four elders clothed in priestly garments, with crowns upon their heads and seated on thrones.

In the *fifth* chapter the Lord is seen as a Lamb who had been slain, but is now risen from the dead. He is seen in Heaven as the Son of David and as David's Lord, as the King of the Jews.

He takes a seven-sealed book, His title deed to the kingdom in Israel and likewise to the kingdoms of the world. Each of the sealed portions of the book contains a section of judgments to be executed on the earth before He comes forth to take His kingdom. These judgments are intended to cleanse the kingdom, the area of the kingdom, and take out of it all iniquity, all things which offend. The twenty-four elders sing a triumphant song when He takes the book, declare He has a right to take it and break the seals, because He had been slain, by His blood had redeemed them out of every nation, people, kindred and tongue, had made them priests and kings unto God, and they should reign on the earth.

John is a figure of the true Church caught up to Heaven to meet the Lord when He shall descend into the air with His trumpet-like voice.

The twenty-four elders represent the transfiguration and enthronement of the Church as a body of kings and priests. The twenty-four elders singing the song of redemption and rule represent the Church getting ready to come forth with the risen Christ when He shall have broken the seals and begun His hardening judgments on the earth.

From the fourth to the fifth chapters inclusive you have a picture of the first part of our Lord's return and its effect upon the Church after it has been translated to Heaven.

From the *fourth* chapter to the *nineteenth*, the *Church is not once seen on the earth*.

From the *fifth* chapter to the *nineteenth* you have a picture of what will take place on the earth after the Church has been removed to Heaven. Hardening judgments are sent from the hand of God. Anti-Christ and his wild-beast kingdom are set up and run their course. Heaven and earth are full of tumult. It is a time of *hell on earth*. It is a time when all men's hearts are failing them for fear. It is a time when fear and the pit take hold on all.

Then in the *nineteenth* chapter there is the sound of marriage bells. The Church as a Bride makes herself ready for the marriage ceremony; she clothes herself in the beautiful, white byssus worth its weight in gold.

The invitations are sent out to the marriage supper.

The marvellous marriage takes place.

The indescribable marriage supper is on.

The door in Heaven is again opened and the Lord Himself comes forth as a man of war riding the steed of His immaculate judgment.

He comes forth as the undisputed and supreme Word of the living God.

He comes as King of kings and Lord of lords. He is followed by the Church as an army of horsemen.

Nor is this transformation surprising.

The Church is like a chameleon.

She changes her color to suit her Lord.

When He is the Rejected One she walks on earth as a stranger and a pilgrim awaiting His return.

When He is a Bridegroom, she is a Bride.

When He is King, she is a Queen.

When He is a warrior, she is an army of warriors.

When He comes forth to judge, she comes forth as His associate in judgment.

When He is unmanifested in Heaven, she is unmanifested and hidden with Him.

When He is revealed in glory, she is revealed in glory with Him.

Thus the Coming of our Lord Jesus Christ is twofold.

He comes *for* His Church.

He comes *with* His Church.

And this twofold Coming is set forth in Scripture from the first book, Genesis, to the last book, Revelation.

The doctrine of the twofold Coming of Christ is an inhering and integral part of the very fibre and constitution of the Bible.

II. The Coming of Christ for His Church is secret and imminent.

It is *secret*.

The taking away of *Enoch* was secret.

The world knew nothing about it till he was gone.

The taking of *Noah* into the ark was secret. The people went on eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage and knew not till the day Noah and his family entered into the ark.

The snatching of *Lot* out of Sodom was secret.

The Sodomites ate and drank and bought and sold and planted and got much gain, till the day Lot went out of the city.

They did not know he was gone till the rain of fire and brimstone came down and destroyed them all.

The taking of *Asenath, Joseph's wife*, into the palace with him was secret, was altogether unknown to his brethren till he came forth with her in the chariot of glory.

The entrance of *Zipporah, Moses' wife* to the inn was secret. It was not known or revealed till after she had entered there.

The Coming of the Lord as *a thief in the night* corroborates the personal and parabolic types.

The Coming of the Lord *for* His Church is not open, but *secret*.

He Himself says to the Church:

"I will come on thee (arrive over thee) as a thief, and thou shalt not know what hour I will come upon thee (arrive over thee)." (Rev. 3:3)

After He has warned His disciples that His Coming will be as it was in the days of Noah, He says:

"Watch therefore: for ye know not what hour your Lord doth come." (Matt. 24:42)

I do not know what hour the Lord will come.

You do not know what hour the Lord will come.

The Christian who presumes to fix the hour and set the date contradicts the Lord Himself; but striking as the Lord's statement is and positive as is His assurance that no one knows when He will return, the force and impact of the warning lies in the exhortation to *watch*.

The meaning of that is so clear and simple that he who runs may read.

It meant to those disciples to whom He spoke that after He should go to Heaven and His Father's throne His return would be so uncertain and withal so imminent they should be constantly in the attitude of expectation and readiness.

As they did not know what hour, so far as they were concerned, it might have been any hour. As an hour is made up of moments and no moment was designated, it might have been—*any moment*.

Our Lord's exhortation to the disciples therefore meant, and cannot mean anything less, that they were to be in a state of expectation and readiness *every moment*.

In the parable of the householder who went away leaving his house in the care of servants and the porter

telling them that he was coming back in a day unknown to them, that he might in the day he did return come in any one of the four watches, at even, at midnight, at cock-crowing or in the morning, and thus increased and emphasized the uncertainty of his return, our Lord ends by applying the parable and bidding His disciples to watch for His own return after He should be gone into Heaven, adding an exhortation which insistently applies to the Church and Christians now. He says:

“And what I say unto you *I say unto all*, WATCH.” (Mark 13:37) We, as Christians, as well as the early disciples, are taught that the return of the Lord to His house, the Church, is uncertain as to the day or the time of the day; and since it might be in any one of the four watches or hours of the day, might be any watch or hour of the day and, therefore, any moment of any hour.

The exhortation of the Lord and its present and inevitable application is the headquarters and indisputable demonstration that His Coming always has been and is now *imminent*.

In his *First Epistle to the Corinthians* the apostle Paul exhorts Christians to recognize that they have not come behind in any gift (I Cor. 1:7) while waiting for the Lord; they have been equipped and made ready for that event as an imminent possibility in their daily lives; and while it is true the Coming here signifies the appearing, as that appearing is inclusive of the Coming of the Lord *for* His Church and cannot take place till He does so come, the exhortation is of itself a demonstration and a proof that the Coming of the Lord *for* the Church was then and is now—*imminent*.

In the *fifteenth chapter of his First Epistle to the Corinthians* the apostle affirms the Lord is coming, that the dead in Christ shall arise, and the living be changed. In those who should be “living” when the Lord should come he included himself as having expected the Lord might come in his day. He says:

“...We shall not all sleep (die), but we shall all be changed,” (I Cor. 15:51).

It is his declaration that there will be a generation of Christians alive in the earth when the Lord comes and that this generation might be the generation of any day, this day as of any day.

In his *Second Epistle* to the same Church he announces his absolute confidence should he die, if his body like a tent habitation should be taken down he would still have a house, a building not made with hands, a dwelling place in Heaven which death could neither invade nor touch (II Cor. 5:1); but he does not want to die. He does not want his body to be removed and himself, even for a moment, remain a naked spirit, a disembodied soul. He wants the Lord to come while he is alive and to change him, transform his mortal body and clothe him with His heavenly and immortal body.

Paul says all this because, according to his testimony, he believes the Lord might come in his day, might come any time and save him from dying, from the worm, from corruption and the grave.

Paul teaches the Coming of Christ for His saints was *imminent* in that day.

To the *Church at Philippi* he writes that he is sometimes weary, the chain of his Roman imprisonment weighs heavily upon him. He has been used of God to make saints even in Cæsar’s household; but, he longs to depart and be with Christ which he is assured would be, “far better” (Phil. 1:23); to remain, however, and still witness for the Lord he sees clearly enough is his prime duty. He realizes therefore that he ought not to be wishing for death and thus longing to lay the Christian armour down. As a consequence in the *third chapter* and at the close of it we find him saying he is a citizen of a country which is in Heaven. He is no longer yearning for death nor expecting it. With dear vision he sees the Lord is Coming. He is waiting for that Coming. He is waiting for the Lord to come as the Saviour of his body. He is expecting Him at any time and according to His measureless power to change this mortal body, this body of limitation and humiliation and fashion it like unto His own body of immortality and glory.

Every word he writes combines to utter and proclaim the immense fact that in the hour when he wrote the letter he with the rest of the Church looked upon the Coming of the Lord as *imminent*.

He writes to the *Church at Thessalonica*, the first inspired epistle he ever wrote. In this letter he commends the Christians of that Church, not only because they had turned to God from idols to serve the living and true God, but because they were waiting (expecting) the risen Son of God who had delivered them from the wrath to come, to descend from Heaven and take them to Himself. (I Thess. 1:9,10)

He tells those who were sorrowing over their dead, those who had fallen asleep in Christ, not to sorrow as others who had no hope, because the Lord was Coming. He would come down into the air and even before He

should manifest His power upon the living He would raise the Christian dead. Then he says the living should be changed and both the risen and the transfigured be caught up together and meet (and necessarily know one another) in the Lord's presence. In saying all this he uses the simple but tremendously significant words:

"...*We which are alive, and remain unto the Coming of the Lord. . .*" (I Thess. 4:15).

It would be impossible to state in any more forceful or dynamic way the apostle's belief that he might not die; that in all probability he would continue to live till the Lord should come; and as he fixed no date nor time nor season—it might be any day.

If this language and attitude do not mean immanency; and if he does not involve the whole Church in the same attitude of expected immanency, then the language of the apostle Paul may as well be repudiated as having any capacity for intelligent meaning.

In writing to these same *Thessalonian Christians* he sincerely prays the entire spirit, soul and body of each may be preserved blameless unto the Coming of the Lord. (I Thess. 5:23)

In no stronger, more absolutely positive way could the Apostle put himself on record as praying that not one of them should die till the Lord should come.

He writes to *Titus* that the Coming of the Lord is the "Blessed Hope" (Titus 2:13); and that the grace of God teaches us as Christians to be expecting it while we live.

Take up and reflect upon this startling statement of his.

This is what he says:

"For the *grace* of God that bringeth salvation hath appeared to all men,

"Teaching us that, denying ungodliness and worldly lusts, we should live soberly, righteously, and godly, in this present world;

"Looking for that blessed hope, and the glorious appearing of the great God and our Saviour Jesus Christ;" (Titus 2:11-13).

Grace teaching us how to live, and as the culmination of that grace-taught life, to be *looking* that is, *expecting* the Lord to come while we live.

If this is not immanency and if we are not here taught that this attitude of expectancy is bequeathed as the gift and teaching of grace to the Church through all ages even to the present hour, then the language of the New Testament is a compound collocation of trifling and meaningless phrases.

Paul writes to the *Hebrew Christians* to remember *Yom Kippur*, the Day of Atonement; and just as the Israelites after the sacrifice were waiting and expecting the chosen man who had led away the scapegoat to come back without the sin-offering unto their complete and full, typical salvation, so they should be waiting and expecting the Lord to return as one who had discharged their sins and cast them behind His back.

This is the testimony of the apostle Paul, an unbroken testimony that the Coming of the Lord was imminent in his day and, therefore, since he was writing to the Church for all time, imminent in our day.

James declares the Coming of the Lord draweth nigh. He is even at the door. He is standing there as judge. (James 5:8) The time has come for judgment to begin at the House of God before it begins upon the world. Should the door open and the Lord come, the Church would find itself face to face with the judgment seat where Christians must answer, not for salvation, but for the stewardship of salvation.

The Lord Himself is the supreme witness of His own immanency.

He bids the apostle *John* write a letter which He Himself dictates to the Church at Sardis, and which He bids all the Churches to hear as the message of the Holy Ghost for this age.

He says:

"If therefore thou shalt not watch, I will *come on thee as a thief*, and *thou shalt not know what hour* I will come upon thee." (Rev. 3:3)

In this He says to the Church at Sardis, and to the Church in the world everywhere today:

"I am coming. There is not a predicted event between us. My coming is so immanent, the only safe attitude for you to take is to be waiting and watching for me."

Later on He exhorts them to hold fast because He is not only coming at an *unexpected moment*, but coming so *quickly*, when He does come, that should they be found wanting in such a moment He would take from them the crown promised to the faithful.

In the midst of further revelation given to *John* who is then in Patmos for His sake, He declares abruptly that He is coming *as a thief* and warns those who profess His name to keep their garments lest coming suddenly He should find them sleeping, snatch away their garments and put them to shame in all their nakedness. (See Rev. 16:15)

In the temple there were nightly guards. They wore a special robe which indicated their place and function. The robe was therefore the profession they made as temple guards. They had a captain over them. He was liable in any one of the night watches to come forth and inspect them. When he found anyone asleep upon his post he quietly removed his garment. When the sleeper awoke and went forth all saw his shame.

As Christians we have been put on guard. We are to keep the faith once for all delivered to the saints. We make profession of the name of Christ. The Lord who is the Captain of our salvation may come at any time. There is no calendar in which His Coming is dated or fixed. Those who have made a profession of His name and nothing more; who have no real, indwelling, spiritual life; who at the most have been merely “church members,” professors and not possessors, will be left behind. Their repudiation will be the stripping off of their garments of profession. They will be put to shame before all eyes.

The Lord’s exhortation to hold on to the garment lest He should come and snatch it away is a startling and clear emphasis of His immanency.

The book of Revelation closes with the climacteric demonstrations and proof that the Coming of the Lord for the Church is always imminent. In the closing lines of this book our Lord gives His last message to the Church. (See Rev. 22:17)

He says the Spirit is asking Him to come from Heaven.

He says the Bride (the truly regenerated portion of the professing Church) is asking Him to Come.

He commands those who have heard that He is to come the Second time to lift up the voice of prayer and invite Him to come.

Then He gives this last message to the Church, a startling and amazing message.

Listen to it well!

Here are the very last words sent down by the risen Lord to the Church:

“... SURELY I COME QUICKLY...” (Rev. 22:20)

By these words He says to the Church:

“The next thing is My Coming.”

“The thing for which you are to wait, the thing which you are to be expecting, and for which you are to be every day ready, is the *next thing*.”

“The next thing for the Church, the thing that is always next and nearest and therefore possible at any moment is—*My Coming*.”

Thus from Heaven with all the authority of infallible utterance and all the solemnity of last words, the Risen Son of God declares His *Second Coming* is the thing next and nearest to the Church, and thus proclaims as headquarters, as indisputable and undebatable, truth that *His Coming is imminent* and will always be imminent till He actually does come.

The Bible therefore closes with the divinely Authorized doctrine of—

THE IMMANENCY OF THE SECOND COMING.

And it so closes with the preceding and warning words of the Son of God Himself that should anyone seek to take away this doctrine now written into and imbedded in the book, he will do so *at the peril of having his part taken out of the book of life*. (See Rev. 22:18,19)

It is no light thing to deny the immanency of the Lord’s Coming.

He who does so jauntily and carelessly does so at fearful peril.

He denies that which the Lord declares lies most weightily upon His own heart; and that to which He wishes

the Church to respond with expectant faith and fervent prayer.

He who denies immanency takes a risk concerning which the Lord has clearly warned.

Let it be repeated then, the Bible closes with the doctrine of—

THE IMMANENCY OF THE SECOND COMING.

But—if, as some do not hesitate to teach, He is not to come for a thousand years after the world is converted why should the Holy Ghost ask Him to come; why should the Church in its best estate ask Him to come; why should I or any individual Christian pray for Him to come?

If He cannot come till nineteen twenty-five or nineteen fifty, as some teachers who are wise above what is written affirm, why should you or I pray for Him to come? If certain fixed events must take place before He can come for the Church why should any of us insist that He should come?

On any other ground than immanency such attitude and prayer would be idle mockery and worthless mummery.

Nay! if the language of Scripture does not teach the Coming of our Lord Jesus Christ to be imminent; if the statement that He is Coming as a thief; that the hour is unknown; that He will come when the Church is not expecting Him; if the exhortation to wait, to expect, to watch, to be ready; if the expression, “. . . we which are alive and *remain* unto the coming of the Lord . . .” (1 Thess. 4:15); if the clear and explicit statement of the Lord Himself, His disciples and apostles do not mean immanency and are not to be accepted by the Church as teaching immanency, then language is meaningless, words are a confusion, all promise is a lie and Scripture, instead of being a revelation, is a misrepresentation, a bundle of childish incoherencies, or devil-inspired fooleries.

If Jesus Christ and His apostles do not teach His imminent Coming, then He and His disciples were the most mistaken of all men, or of all men most guilty of insincerity and deception. If they were mistaken in one respect they might have been mistaken in others. If they were insincere, they were cool and predeterminate deceivers and both the Lord and His disciples must be completely and forever set aside.

In the nature of the case, seeing the Lord is very and essential truth itself, and what His disciples and apostles said were the inspiration of the truth He gave them, no conclusion as to the insincerity or intent of deception on the part of the Lord and His disciples can be accepted for a moment. On the contrary, the statement and exhortation of the Lord and His apostles must be accepted as absolute, and infallible truth.

The Coming of our Lord Jesus Christ must therefore be received as a promised and always imminent event.

To this fully proclaimed and overwhelmingly demonstrated and proved Scriptural doctrine of immanency, it is objected that our Lord revealed to Peter that he should die (See John 21:18,19), and some years later appeared in a vision to Paul, assuring him he should go to Rome and there testify in His name. (See Acts 23:11)

Since Peter was to die before the Lord should come, and a future experience of Paul must be fulfilled before the Lord could come, these two announcements ought to be sufficient, so it is said, to prove that neither in Peter's day nor in Paul's day was the Coming of the Lord imminent. This flat contradiction, and by the Lord Himself, removes this doctrine of immanency and all attempts at the construing of Christ's Coming as such from the field, not only of acceptance, but even of consideration.

The answer to this subtle suggestion is simple and direct.

The statement to Peter and the commission to Paul contain within them *an unexpressed but well understood contingency*.

That contingency is, always, the Lord's Coming.

Nor is this begging the question by mere assertion, or by impracticable and unwarranted principle of action. Go down the streets of the city tomorrow. You will find them packed with the thronging crowds. Every man, every woman there has a plan or some degree of intent and purpose. You yourselves here have plans for tomorrow or next summer, or it may be ten years from now. But you have no guarantee of tomorrow. You do not know what a day may bring forth. Give you a week! What do you know about a week? In less than that time you may die, be buried out of sight and forgotten by the hurrying crowd. David said there was but a step betwixt him and death. (See 1 Sam. 20:3) He told the truth. It is true of you. God has only to withdraw His finger from your pulse, your heart stops, you are gone and all your tomorrow's plans fall out of your dead hand, break to pieces and are blown away as when so much dust is blown by careless winds. By every law of your body, by the sentence that is upon you, by

your helplessness to avoid the ruthless germ, the unexpected blow, *death is always imminent* for you and human kind. And yet plans for the building of houses are taken out, journeys are planned, trips over mountains and across the seas. You say, and people say, "I expect to go here and go there. I expect to do this and do that." All the time the *contingency of death is understood*. We shall do certain things. We shall go into certain places. We shall take certain journeys—if we do not die.

That is *understood* all over the world and by every human being.

That is a *contingency* which remains as a *silent understood factor* in every detail and plan of life.

This principle of understood contingency is illustrated in the message of the Lord to *Jonah* and in the subsequent result of that message.

The prophet was commanded to announce to the idolatrous city that in forty days it should be destroyed. Jonah delivered the warning in clear and unmistakable terms, as it is written:

"... he cried, and said, Yet forty days, and Nineveh shall be overthrown." (Jonah 3:4)

But more than forty days passed and Nineveh was not destroyed.

Nineveh was not destroyed because the people repented and turned to the Lord. And this fact of repentance was a *contingency* foreseen and inwrought as an inclusive part of the Lord's statement that Nineveh should be destroyed.

Like the contingency of death, like the contingency of repentance as noted, the Second Coming of our Lord Jesus Christ is an *abiding contingency*. Since it is a proclaimed imminence it is always an interior and understood contingency, lying back of, and ready as a factor in, every circumstance, every planned and proclaimed event.

Peter would die and Paul would go to Rome—if *the Lord did not come*.

This Coming was always possible. It was possible at the moment when Peter faced death. It was possible when Paul contemplated Rome.

The Coming of the Lord is an everyday contingency—as much so as death, and more so. More so because by divine inspiration the Apostle has said, "... We shall not all sleep (die)," (I Cor. 15:51). Because there will be one generation of Christians who shall not die; one generation of Christians who shall continue to live till the Lord comes.

Between us and the appearing of Christ in glory there are many predicted events, events which concern the Jew and the nations of the Gentiles, and not the Church.

Between us and the Coming of the Lord into the air for His Church there is not a single predicted event which is not contingent on that Coming.

Because the hour and the moment have not been set before the Church what the Lord has said unto one of His disciples He has said and is now saying to all:

"WATCH."

And every letter of that word and every accent of the sincerity of the Son of God spells and emphasizes the all impressive and appealing word:

"IMMANENCY."

III. *As a Church we are to wait and be ready for the secret and imminent Coming of the Lord.*

The twofold motto of the true Church of Christ is—

"TO SERVE AND WAIT."

"... ye turned to God from idols to SERVE the living and true God;

"And TO WAIT FOR HIS SON FROM HEAVEN. . ." (I Thess. 1:9,10).

And because we are to serve and wait; because the Lord may come any hour, any moment to take an account of our service and to examine into the sincerity of our waiting, He bids us to be *ready*.

"Therefore be ye also READY: for in *such an hour* as YE THINK NOT *the Son of man cometh*." (Matt. 24:44)

We are to be ready!

That means—

We must make our calling and election sure!

We must come out and be separate from the world.

The world we are living in is a world under judgment, it is a world taking its breath and thinking of its pleasures under a suspended sentence, suspended only by the grace of God; but a world for all that steadily marching each hour to certain doom. As Christians we should come out of it, come out of it as a system, nor touch the unclean thing lest the stain of it be on us irrevocably. We should keep out of it as Abraham kept out of Sodom, lest we be mixed up with it as Lot was with Sodom and like Lot be saved at last (if saved at all) only so as by fire.

We must establish character as spiritual, and not fleshly, people.

They that are in the flesh cannot please God.

If we *live* in the Spirit we are to *walk* in the Spirit.

In this the children of God are to be made manifest.

The children of the flesh walk according to the course of this world and God is not in all their thoughts.

The Christian is to walk under spiritual impulse, with outward and upward look, joying in God and ready with heart unafraid to meet the Lord at any turn in the road.

As Christians we are to walk as children of the light and children of the day.

We are not to sleep as others do. We are to watch and be sober. We are to put off the night clothes and put on the day clothes, even the armour of light, even the whole armour of God. We are to put on the breast-plate of faith and love, and for an *helmet*, the hope of salvation (the “blessed” hope that the Lord may come any moment to “save” the bodies of the saints, raising the dead and changing the living). We are to put on the Lord Jesus Christ and make no provision for the flesh to fulfill the lusts thereof.

We must be full of service.

As Christians we are here to serve.

In proportion as we serve here we shall reign hereafter.

We do not belong to ourselves. We belong to Him who bought and paid for us.

We cannot afford to neglect our spiritual gifts nor waste our time; for both gifts and time are His.

We shall have to give an account to the Lord how we have used our time, whether for Him or for self first: how we have used our substance, whether for our own pleasure, or to magnify His name.

It is necessary, indeed, that we should be ready, because those who are mere professors, who are as unprepared as foolish virgins, will be left behind.

It is necessary because the Coming of the Lord for His Church means the judgment seat.

Are you ready as a professed Christian to be summoned any moment to the judgment seat of Christ?

At the judgment seat of Christ you will either receive a reward or suffer loss.

Your place in the kingdom of Christ will depend on the degree of your readiness when you stand at the judgment seat to give an account of yourself and not another.

The immanency of our Lord’s return is emphasized by the “signs of the times.”

The signs of the times primarily have nothing to do with the Church.

The signs of the times are related to the *Appearing* of Christ.

The signs of the times indicate that the day of Christ’s appearing is drawing nigh.

Signs in the Protestant Church.

Every day Protestantism is losing its solidarity in respect to the things of God.

Every day there is a new sect, a new schism, a new psalm or a new doctrine.

More and more every day there is the reign of unbelief, unspirituality and undisguised infidelity.

Signs in the Romish Church.

Steadily and with unbroken ranks Rome is marching on to temporal sovereignty and that hour when she shall

be carried and sustained by the nations of the earth.

Signs in the increase and extension of travel.

It was foretold that in the closing hours of this age the means of communication among men should be multiplied and the multitudes should come and go.

Within the last fifty years the means of travel have been enormously increased. We sail over the seas at railroad speed. We rush across the land on tracks of steel and with lightning impulse. With constructions like winged monsters we fly up and through the astonished sky. Everybody travels. The whole world is in commotion, interchanging and moving its populations to and fro till the earth has become like a seething ant-hill. The globe has become so small that time and space are nullified.

Signs in the increase of human knowledge.

It was foretold that coincidently with travel knowledge should increase.

Children are wiser today in some things in science and the application of science than men of a generation ago. Everybody reads, and in the morning newspapers the doings of a whole world lie gathered and sifted in a single paragraph.

Signs in the nations of the once Roman empire.

Amid the nations which today are the fragments of the once Roman empire, the war so long threatened, so clearly foreseen by some, and so blindly unforeseen and disbelieved in by others, is on. The map is changing. The ten kings are coming and that eleventh king who is the Devil's madman and the man of sin.

The sign of the clay.

Clay represents the people and the rule of the people—*Democracy*.

The prophet Daniel foretold that clay (democracy) would be the last material in the prophetic image; that democracy would be the last form of rule just before the Lord should come to set up His kingdom of stone. Democracy is here. It is expanding in Europe, in Asia. Out of it will come the ten kings, kings elected by the people, democratic kings.

The hour of *iron* and *clay* is here.

Signs among the Jews.

Whether they know it or not, they are, nationally, homeward bound; as the exiled King is about to return, the exiled nation of itself is getting ready to meet Him, to repent at the sight of Him and own Him as God and King.

And because all these signs indicate infallibly that the time is drawing nigh for Christ to appear in glory to take to Himself His great power and reign; and because He must come secretly and unobserved of the world for His Church before He can come with her in glory, it is evident, immensely and overwhelmingly evident that the immanency of His descent into the upper air and the call to His elect Church to meet Him there is startlingly and arousingly emphasized, and should impel every Christian to be awake and ready.

"And what I say unto you I say unto all, WATCH." (Mark 13:37)

For you who are unsaved there is only one place of shelter, and that is under the blood of the Cross. Claim that blood I pray you before it may be too late.

V.
THE JUDGMENT SEAT OF CHRIST

The Judgment Seat of Christ.

My theme tonight is the Judgment Seat of Christ.

I have selected eight texts:

(Revelation 22:12; Romans 14:10,12; II Corinthians 5:10; I Corinthians 4: 5; Matthew 25:21; I Corinthians 3:15; Revelation 3:11; James 5:9.)

Together these texts read:

“And, behold, I come quickly; and my reward is with me, to give every man according as his work shall be.”

“But why dost thou judge thy brother? or why dost thou set at nought thy brother? for we shall all stand before the judgment seat of Christ.”

“So then every one of us shall give account of himself to God.”

“For we must all appear before the judgment seat of Christ; that every one may receive the things done in his body, according to that he hath done, whether it be good or bad.”

“Therefore judge nothing before the time, until the Lord come, who both will bring to light the hidden things of darkness, and will make manifest the counsels of the hearts: and then shall every man have praise of God.”

“His lord said unto him, Well done, thou good and faithful servant: thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord.”

“If any man’s work (any Christian’s work) shall be burned, he shall suffer loss: but he himself shall be saved; yet so as by fire.”

“Behold, I come quickly: hold that fast which thou hast, that no man take thy crown.”

“Grudge not one against another, brethren, lest ye be condemned: behold, the judge standeth before the door.”

Before presenting the theme I shall give as briefly as possible an exposition of the Bible doctrine of judgment. I

shall then lay down certain propositions to prove that our Lord Jesus Christ is coming to take the Church to His judgment seat and that Christians will there be tried not for life and salvation but for work and service as Christians. The Lord will reveal Himself as judge. Each Christian will have to render a personal account of himself. Those who have been faithful in service will take part in the joy of the Lord. Those who have failed to meet the standard will suffer loss. The immanency of the judgment is indicated by the fact that the Lord is represented standing before the door ready to judge.

The Bible is a book of judgments. These judgments are manifold and recorded in fullest detail. Some are immediate and brief. There are others extending in their course over a thousand years.

There are *four* great and distinctive judgments.

The judgment of the cross.

The cross was neither the place nor the act of a suicide. It was not a martyrdom. It was something more than a brutal murder (though murder and brutal it was). It was a judgment.

It was the judgment of God against man.

It was God's judgment against man's nature as well as deeds. It was God's judgment against the world considered as a *system*.

On that cross God was judging Christ His Son as the representative of the natural man and his system called the world.

From the beginning God had been pursuing sin. At the cross He came up with it and overtook it in the personal representation of it by His Son.

He dealt with Him there as very sin, as *the Great Criminal of the Universe*.

All the essential as well as governmental antagonism of God to sin swept forth and broke like a descending deluge upon that perfect and sinless Son. Speaking anticipatively of this hour the Lord Himself by the Spirit through David cries out:

"...all thy waves and thy billows are gone over me." (Ps. 42:7)

And again through David He cries:

"...mine iniquities (the iniquities of those whom He represented and whose iniquities He made His own) have taken hold upon me, so that I am not able to look up; they are more than the hairs of mine head: therefore my heart faileth me." (Ps. 40:12)

By the mouth of the prophet Jeremiah, looking forward and entering into the ordained anguish of the cross, He pours forth the soul-stirring and pathetic lamentation of His heart:

"Is it nothing to you, all ye that pass by? behold, and see if there be any sorrow like unto my sorrow, which is done unto me, wherewith the LORD (the Father) hath afflicted me in the day of his fierce anger." (Lam. 1:12)

Out from the midst of that black tempest of wrath, indignation, and judgment where He suffers in the name and as the representative of sinful men, suddenly there comes the amazing cry:

"My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?" (Matt. 27:46)

That uttered agony expresses a fact and foretells a condition.

The fact is, the sinless, holy, perfect Son of God and God the Son, the Son who from all eternity was in the bosom of the Father, the Son who in the flesh He assumed for the Father's glory, told Him out and ceaselessly magnified Him, that Son in that hour upon the cross was forsaken of the Father, the Father turned His back upon Him, hid His face from Him and left Him in the sunless, starless midnight of a complete and infinite repudiation; withdrew from Him every manifestation of His Fatherly love, left Him to sink under and be swallowed up by the endless, measureless billows of wrath in which every surge of every wave was a deeper and ever deeper drowning agony of helpless and hopeless despair.

The condition foretold by that cry which rent the earth, echoed to the farthest reach of the universe and pierced with pain the heart of listening angels is the condition of every soul forsaken at last of God.

A fact and a condition!

The fact—that all who have not received the salvation bought at this fearful price of the cross will be forsaken.

The condition—agony, agony uttered and expressed in one eternally repeated and eternally unanswered question, “My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?”

The aspect of the judgment of the cross is two-fold.

Because the death of Christ met the law, the government and the being of God, it has obtained a stay in proceedings against the individual sinner.

Because that cross is the demonstration of the unimpeachable righteousness of God, it has enabled Him to bring the world upon mercy ground where He can deal with it in grace, justify the ungodly and still be just. The cross has set Christ before the world as the sacrifice for sin provided of God, and as the substitute the sinner is invited of God to claim.

The moment any sinner be he never so stained, so sunken and hopeless in sin offers up Christ on the cross by faith as his sacrifice for sin and claims Him as his personal substitute, as having taken his place and suffered for Him, that moment the Father accepts the death of the cross for the believing sinner, counts him to have died in the person of His Son, counts the wrath which fell upon the Son as having fallen on the believer, reckons the believer’s sins as fully transferred to the Son (so that He is *made sin* for the believer) reckons that the righteousness of Christ’s obedience unto death is freely transferred to the believer, sees the believer as having passed through the judgment with Christ on the cross, justifies him before the demands of the law and accepts him as *His own very righteousness* in His now risen, ascended, glorified and priestly Son.

On the basis of this divine and exact justification the Son of God in His office and function as the Second Adam, the New Head of the race, communicates of His own life and nature to the justified and accepted believer. That believer has passed out of death into life. He is one with God in Christ. He is eternally saved. He has been delivered and saved by the judgment of the cross.

So complete, so ample and so immediately available is this provided salvation that tonight, at this present moment any individual sinner here though he be as black as hell’s deepest darkness and no man on earth be willing to lend him a hand, if he will in child-like simplicity take God at His Word, claim the crucified Christ as his sacrificial substitute, say believingly in his inmost soul as though he talked face to face with God, “Almighty and Holy Lord, I ought to be eternally ruined, swept out of Thy presence and denied every joy, death, endless, hopeless is my due; but I claim Thy Son hanging on that cross for such as I, accept all the judgments that fell on Him as having fallen on me and as having satisfied for every claim against me. Count His agony and damnation as mine and as completely and finally suffered there.” Let any sinner here say that, mean that in honest, claiming faith and God will accept you, accept you quicker than the flash of a second. He will brush away every cloud of condemnation that hangs above you. You shall never stand at the judgment bar of doom. You shall be saved now and safe forever more.

This is the judgment of the cross and the salvation it brings.

The Judgment Seat of Christ.

This is the judgment next in order. I shall speak of it later on and in full detail.

The third in order is,

The Judgment of the Living Nations.

This will take place when the Lord descends in glory to the Mount of Olives; as it is written:

“When the Son of man shall come in his glory, and all the holy angels with him, then shall he sit upon the throne of his glory: And before him shall be gathered all nations. . .” (Matt. 25:31,32; See 25:31-46).

That this throne will be at Jerusalem is the declaration of the prophet: “*At that time* they shall call Jerusalem the throne of the LORD; and all the nations shall be gathered unto it. . .” (Jer. 3:17).

The nations gathered before Him will be the ten nations of the revived Roman empire under the last Kaiser, the demonized, Devil-led anti-Christ.

The nations will be living and gathered as armies under his leadership, against Jerusalem; as it is written:

“For I will gather all nations against Jerusalem to battle. . .” (Zech. 14:2).

Under no circumstance, nor in any way is it a resurrection judgment. There is no thought nor suggestion of resurrection in the scene.

The basis of judgment will be the treatment by these nations of the Lord’s brethren in the flesh—the Jews.

After the Church has been removed from the earth the Lord will send out elect and believing Jews who will testify that the Messiah, the true King is coming. It will be the Gospel, not of grace as it is in this hour, but the *Gospel of the Kingdom*. Many of these heralds will be imprisoned, some of them will suffer hunger and thirst and nakedness. If among the gathered armies in this hour of judgment any may be found who had dealt kindly with them as occasion offered, gave them food or raiment, took them in, treated them with hospitality or visited them in their confinement and need, the Lord will count it as having been rendered to Himself and will permit such men to remain and live in the kingdom He is about to set up.

Those who have maltreated these Jews shall die before the Lord even as the rest in the armies shall die. They shall melt away while they stand upon their feet; as it is written:

“And this shall be the plague wherewith the LORD will smite all the people that have fought against Jerusalem; Their flesh shall consume away while they stand upon their feet, and their eyes shall consume away in their holes, and their tongue shall consume away in their mouth.” (Zech. 14:12)

The Judgment of the Great White Throne.

This will be revealed *a thousand years later*, at the end of the Kingdom on its earthly and time side.

At that judgment throne the Christless dead of all ages shall be raised and stand; as it is written:

“And I saw a great white throne, and him that sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away; and there was found no place for them.

“And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God; and the books were opened: and another book was opened, which is the book of life: and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works.

“And the sea gave up the dead which were in it; and death and hell delivered up the dead which were in them: and they were judged every man according to their works.” (Rev. 20:11-13)

The dead, small and great, the high and the low, the rich and the poor, the king who sat on his throne and the slave who served in his hall, the open and out-breaking sinner and the sinner secret and unknown, the worst and the best—OUT OF CHRIST shall be there.

They will be judged according to the standard of God in every age: by His handiwork in the heavens as the star written and nightly rebuke to idolaters; by the moral law which was intended to reveal the immoral helplessness of man and his need of a regenerating God; by the ceremonial law which proclaimed the way of redemption by blood and spelled the name of a Coming Christ in every offered sacrifice, in the death of every substitute victim; by conscience which leads men to accuse and excuse themselves and thus on the one side emphasize the demand of the moral law and on the other to confess, even unconsciously, that they have failed and sinned; by the Gospel which invites men to the way of salvation revealed in the cross; and by their deeds recorded and indelibly stamped upon the soul.

In all that motley throng not one shall be saved.

All will die a second time.

This is the final and *Great White Throne* judgment and its unspeakable consequences to all who shall be called to stand there.

I shall now consider and expound the *Judgment Seat of Christ*. In doing so I shall lay down certain propositions.

1. Our Lord Jesus Christ is coming to translate the Church to heaven, take His place upon the Judgment Seat and enter into personal examination of each Christian.

2. At the Judgment Seat of Christ the Christian will not be judged in respect to life and salvation, but exclusively for work and service as a Christian.

3. At this Judgment Seat our Lord Jesus Christ will reveal Himself as very God, and each Christian will have to give a faithful and intimate account of himself or herself to Him.

4. The Christian who at that Judgment Seat is judged and determined as faithful shall receive a reward. He will be permitted to share in *the joy of the Lord*.

5. The Christian who shall not be found faithful will suffer loss. He cannot enter into the joy of the Lord.

6. The Judgment Seat of Christ will have a two-fold consummation—the judgment of the Christian and the judgment of the nations.

7. Christ as judge is already imminently before the door of the Church.

It is evident no man can preach from eight texts and talk in sixths and sevenths and hope to be eloquent. The most to which it may be possible for him to attain is to be informing and instructive. I desire to be both.

I shall therefore take up the first proposition:

I. Our Lord Jesus Christ is Coming to translate the Church to Heaven, take His place upon the Judgment Seat and enter into personal examination of each Christian.

This Judgment Seat of Christ comes in between the judgment of the cross upon the one side and the judgment of the nations upon the other. It will take place at the Coming of the Lord into the air for His Church.

I have told you in previous sermons that our Lord Jesus Christ is coming in glory.

He is coming in the glory of the Father—as *His Son*.

He is coming in the glory of the angels—as *their Master*.

He is coming in His own glory—as *God the Son*.

It will be the Coming in which He shall judge the nations at Jerusalem.

All the heavens shall be filled with His glory. It shall be as though they were aflame with His Majesty.

The earth shall own His Coming. The seas shall lift up their voices. The concourse of onlooking worlds shall fling down their wreaths of hallelujahs and intone the exultant and triumphant “All Hail”; but as already told you, before He comes in glory, before He is visible to an astonished earth He will come into the upper air for His Church as suddenly, as unwarningly as the lightning’s flash; as secretly, softly and silently as a thief in the dead of night. He will call up the Church to meet Him, not the great, outward professing body calling itself the Church (so calling itself from Apostate Romanism and infidelic Protestantism through all the various offshoots, Unitarianism, Universalism, Emmanuelism, New Thought, and Christian Science), but those, rather, who are genuinely the Lord’s; those who have been made partakers of the divine nature; who are indwelt by the Holy Ghost and are one in life and purpose with the Lord. He will call these. He will raise the dead who have fallen asleep in His name. He will transfigure the living. He will take them into the place He went to prepare two thousand years ago, into the third heaven, into paradise, into the city four square, the city of the jasper wall, the golden street, the wide-flung gates of pearl and the river of crystal, the free flowing river of life. There He will set up His Judgment Seat and require a personal accounting from each Christian.

II. At the Judgment Seat of Christ the Christian will not be judged in respect to life and salvation, but exclusively for work and service as a Christian.

And this in the nature of the case,

Primarily, because the death of Christ has met the judgment originally due the believer. When the believer claimed the death of Christ as his sacrifice for sin and claimed Him as a personal substitute the believer was at once delivered from his standing and place as a sinner under doom of forfeited life, accepted as not guilty, justified and reckoned as righteous in the righteousness of Christ and in Christ as his actual righteousness; that is to say, he received not only an *imputed* but, *imparted* righteousness.

So clear and clean is this transaction between the believer and a once-crucified Christ that were I with other believers at this moment summoned to that Judgment Seat, did justice appear before me with a naked sword and in stern and merciless tones say unto me that my life was a sinful failure, or infraction of divine law, and that I must pay what I owed with my life, that rightly and fittingly I deserved to be banished from God and the glory of His presence forever I would turn and point to that great crimson blot uplifted on a cross between two thieves and I should say:

“O Justice, as much as you know of all the sin in my nature, all the sin I am and all the sin I have done, I know it too; but, Justice, yonder on the cross I was judged, punished, executed and done to death in the person of my substitute, the substitute whom the infinite and Almighty God Himself provided. I have paid all the debt I owe to the law, the government and the being of God. I have not fallen short in one jot or tittle of the law’s demand. I have paid to the last element of my being every thing the conscience of God could require. God has not winked at any

debt I owe or have partially paid. He has required it all. He has got it all, and He got it all in my substitute, in every drop of blood His Son, my Substitute, shed for me. The conscience of God is satisfied concerning me and my conscience is at rest in the satisfied conscience of God.”

I would say that,

When I said that Justice would sheathe the double-edged and gleaming sword and turn away.

No matter who you are, *worst* or *best* of men the moment you turn and claim the crucified Son of God as your sacrificial substitute you are safe. Safe because Justice cannot demand payment twice, once from *your surety* and *then* from you.

But, that Christians cannot be judged for salvation at the Judgment Seat of Christ is corroboratively demonstrated and proved by the immense and indisputable fact that when they are there it will be in their glorified, immortal bodies, bodies whose very immortality will be the seal they have passed out of alienship and condemnation into sonship and fellowship with God forever.

For, let me repeat what I so often say, “immortality” does not apply to the soul. There is no such thing correctly speaking as an “immortal soul.” No such term can be found in Holy Scripture; nor is such a thing in the nature of the case possible, since the soul is *immaterial*, and *immortality* has to do with that which is *material*. In saying the soul is not immortal and that the word is never so applied, it is not intended to suggest even in the most remote possibility that the soul could ever cease to exist. This is not true. The death of the body does not touch it, makes no essential impression on it. You may kill the body, you cannot kill the soul. Once created the soul continues and will continue forever. The words “immortal,” and “immortality” in Scripture are applied only to the body and signify a deathless, incorruptible body. A deathless and incorruptible body belongs only to the sons of God saved with an everlasting salvation and wholly beyond the possibility of any judgment for life or death.

The Christian will not be judged for salvation at all, but for work and service done down here as a saved person in the name of Christ.

As Christians we are not saved by works.

You might be the best person who ever walked the earth. No mortal being might be able to bring a charge against you. All the shadows might be under your feet. You may be free from any arraigning footstep of the past, but if you do not believe in Jesus Christ, if you do not accept Him by faith as your personal Substitute you are lost, hopelessly and forever lost. You are lost under inherited nature of sin and original condemnation passed upon all; for, by one man sin entered the world and death by sin, and so death passed upon all men. The worst man on God’s earth who does not believe on Jesus Christ is lost and the best man on God’s earth who does not believe on Jesus Christ is lost. Added to this, if when you hear the Gospel you do not immediately own the estimate of God concerning you and accept His Son as your only Saviour, you violate a command given to all, become a sinner if never before, and vitiate any work no matter how good you may seek to offer to the Lord. You cannot be saved by anything you do. You cannot buy salvation by anything you give. It is wholly on the basis of the finished and accepted work of the cross and can be received only by simple and surrendering faith in Jesus Christ. In no wise, in any direction, nor under any circumstances can you be saved by good works; as it is irrevocably written:

“*Not of works, lest any man should boast.*” (Eph. 2:9)

We receive salvation through faith by and because of the unconditional grace of God.

We receive it as a *gift*, pure and simple. We receive it by faith and nothing more.

As saved persons we are as much witnesses to omnipotence as the widespread creation about us. God and God alone could and did save us. If in any fashion we respond to and own Him as our Lord and God, it is because He fashioned the way by which we might be brought into union with Him and has wrought the work which gave our souls the impetus toward Him.

“... it is he that hath made us, and not we ourselves; we are his people, and the sheep of his pasture.” (Ps. 100:3)

And again it is written:

“For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus...” (Eph. 2:10)

I like to take up that word “workmanship,” and repeat it again and again; for, that word means, literally, “poems.”

Old Horace in his song of the Alban hills and the fair Sabinian farm never wrote such hexameters as the living Spirit has wrought in having wrought us. God intended us who are Christians to be full of measured, syllabic, songful harmony, the revelations of divinest grace and infinite perfections.

The Greek called anything that had harmony and unity of form a poem. A statue, a work of art of any sort, a temple, a perfect piece of literature even though it were the straitest prose, was a poem. The gold and ivory statue from the hand of Phidias was a poem. The Parthenon dismantled and in sorrowful ruin as it is today is, nevertheless, the fragment of a poem in stone.

God created us as Christians to be poems, to be beautiful in all the terms and forms of spiritual life, of living faith and in every word and thought to bear witness to the hand of grace and love which has so wondrously and unerringly wrought us.

Let it be remembered! let it never be forgotten! We have done nothing as Christians to save ourselves. God has done it all. The work of salvation is all His and none of ours, and though the natural man lived the whitest life and lived it a thousand years without a single mistake nothing he could do, nor any character he might establish of morality and truth would avail to save him—Salvation is not and never can be by any work that man can do.

But while it is true that we as Christians have done no work, nor could do any that would save us, we have been saved that we might do good works; as it is written:

“For we are his workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto good works, which God hath before ordained that we should walk in them.” (Eph. 2:10)

“What wilt Thou have me *to do?*” was Paul’s first question. (See Acts 9:6)

It is typical, suggestive and all revealing.

We are here, as Christians, for service, we are here to take the place of witnesses.

There are many Christians who imagine if they just live what they call the Christian life and never say a word about Christ they are efficiently and satisfactorily witnessing for Him.

It is a great and grievous mistake.

Before all else we must *speak* of Him.

Our *lips* must give clear and vibrant testimony concerning Him. We must tell about the death of the cross. We must talk of the empty grave, of a risen, ascended and Coming Lord; we must assure those about us that there is a present salvation in His name and we must be clear and strong to say there is none other name under heaven given among men whereby we must be saved. (See Acts 4:12)

This is what the early disciples did.

This is what Paul did.

Think of him going into the synagogues every Sabbath day and testifying to the Jews out of their own Scriptures that Christ must needs suffer, die and be raised again and that this Jesus whom he preached unto them was Christ.

Look at him going yonder to Athens, the city of culture, of intellectual power, of artistic refinement, and not only in the synagogue but in the market place, as Socrates before him hailing the passers-by, arresting their attention and talking to them of Jesus and the resurrection until moved profoundly the very philosophers hailed him to the Areopagus that they might the more fully know of his doctrine.

What a record he leaves in Corinth where his eyes even as he spoke could look upon Parnassus and the Castalian Spring; but where, turning his back upon any temptation to preach with “enticing words of man’s wisdom,” he set the Gospel of the Crucified before them in “demonstration of the Spirit and of power.” (See I Cor. 2:4)

Surely in all history nothing is more dramatic nor more appealing than the scene in Herod’s judgment hall at Cæsarea where with manacled hands and guarded by Roman soldiers he stands before the dissolute king and his beautiful paramour, speaking with unfaltering lips and divine passion to the astounded and brilliant throng of that Christ of God whom blinded Jews had hung upon a tree; whom God had raised from the dead and set Him at His own right hand in the heaven far above all principalities and powers, higher than the heavens as the Redeemer and Saviour, not only of Jew but Gentile also, even the very Romans before him; and speaking in such fashion, with such deep set convictions and consciousness of truth that he wrenched from the lips of Agrippa himself the involuntary cry, “Almost thou persuadest *me* to be a Christian.” (See Acts 26:28)

Not only Paul, not only the called apostles spoke, but Christians in the quiet of private life. Wherever they went and in whatsoever occupation engaged mind and heart were full of the wondrous truth that God had so loved the world He gave His only begotten Son to die for men. (See John 3:16) The light from an open grave so flashed upon them that they could not hide it in the dark of silence. Their hearts were so full of the wonder, the glory and the benediction of a risen Lord that out of the abundance thereof their lips spoke with gladness the joyful tidings.

Testifying of Christ with the tongue, that is the function of the Christian. *This dispensation began with tongues.* Pentecost was the risen Lord's declaration that He would have His disciples go forth and tell the story of His death and resurrection.

This is the function of every Christian, to talk of Christ, not the Christ who lived and walked among men and blessed them merely, but Christ crucified, Christ the sacrifice for sin, Christ the substitute for the sinner, Christ risen, glorified, the present Saviour of every believing sinner.

You need not wait for the preacher to tell it. You can tell it. This is your obligation as a witness.

But a witness must have a character.

A witness whose character is not good is of no avail. He may tell the truth, but his testimony does not count. Yonder is a man on the witness stand. He has told the truth, the exact truth in the case, nothing less and nothing more than the absolute truth; but if the attorney who is against him is keen enough he will summon those who will declare this witness is not to be believed upon his oath; that his reputation for dishonesty is widely known, he can be bought and sold. Let him do this and the testimony of that witness will be ruined, the jury will pay no heed to it.

A Christian who lives an inconsistent life, whose speech is full of unbelief, of doubt or worldliness, carelessness and open sin; a Christian who continually does things no Christian ought to do and who goes where a faithful and devoted Christian ought never to go, becomes sooner or later in so far as the world outside goes a worthless witness. No matter how much truth he may tell, nor how well and earnestly he may tell it, the world will not believe him; they look upon him as a fakir, a hypocrite, an unworthy betrayer of the Lord whose name he wears.

In order to be an efficient witness for Christ so that our testimony shall have a hearing and the work of the Spirit be unhindered, we are under bonds as Christians to build up individual character, a character that shall verify what we profess and preach.

And do you think this is an easy matter? an easy thing in this world, here in this city where ten thousand forces are seeking to drag you from the path of Christian consistency and faith, and when the coordinate and resisting power of evil and unbelief come from within yourself.

You never know what depths of sin and wickedness of hell are in your nature till you turn and start to walk the path that leads to God and Christ, the path that is paved with righteousness and truth, but bordered with grinning fiends or smiling serpents who stretch out hands to help the traitor in your soul; a path in which some times the Devil meets you arrayed as an angel of light and in the name of righteousness seeks to guide your feet into the way of enticing sin.

I have had earnest genuine Christians come to me filled with heart-aches and lamentation. I have had them say to me, "We never knew what sinful and perverse natures we had till we tried to serve the Lord."

You cannot escape from that nature. Like Saint Anthony you may flee from the city and hide in the cave, but sin and shame and Devil and beautiful wantonness will be there in vision of a thousand-fold quickened imagination with whispered word and pictured form to tempt, to fool and lead you all unwillingly astray.

I say to you it is a fight, a battle fierce in which all the powers of darkness will rise up within you and about you to pull you down and away. Neither by tongue of orator nor pen of logician could the *super*-naturalness, the absolute divinity and Heaven birth of Christianity be more overwhelmingly and unanswerably demonstrated than by this upheaval of evil and wicked antagonism and this *internal revolt* of human nature in the regenerated Child of God. To live the Christ life, the life of spirituality and heavenward aspiration, to say "no" to material appetite, to rebuke passion, offer love for hate, purity for impurity and unselfishness for selfishness; in short, the dethronement of the flesh and the enthronement of the Spirit, surely this is not natural, it is not of man nor of earth, but of Heaven and God alone.

If you are a Christian this is the conflict into which you are called and this is your work, to meet assault and

resist, to go forward, fight the good fight of faith and to win. The supernatural life must be uppermost in you; as it is written:

“For though we walk in the flesh, we do not war after the flesh:

“(For the weapons of our warfare are not carnal, but mighty through God to the pulling down of strong holds;)

“Casting down imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth itself against the knowledge of God, and bringing into captivity every thought to the obedience of Christ;” (II Cor. 10:3-5).

This is a part of our function, if we would be faithful and truthful witnesses for Christ, to so live that we win for Christ and Christ wins for Himself in us in the life we live.

As Christians we are each one of us called to be good “ministers” of Christ. But ministering in its true sense means serving others in the name of Christ. We are to minister to the saints, to look after the “household of faith,” to visit the sick and the fatherless in their affliction, to take care of the needy, comfort the troubled, build up and strengthen the faith of others.

We are to give of our substance.

Do you imagine that God prospers any of us in this world that we may wholly spend our substance on ourselves? The only time I recall the Son of God applied the epithet “fool” to anyone was when he spoke of the man who laid up treasure for himself and “*was not rich toward God*” (See Luke 12:21) so He said was everyone like him who made his own life the deposit of his wealth and had nothing for God—a *very fool*, a fool of fools.

Again and again God pours the sunshine of prosperity upon Christians. In spite of their mistakes, their blunders and follies He combines ways and circumstances over which they have no control and brings them unexpected comfort and blessing,—comfort and blessing they never could have obtained if left to their own efforts. And then, when after repeated warnings, a little touch of disaster here, a loss there, they still refuse to be great hearts and liberal with Him, He causes their riches to take wings and flyaway.

I have said to you the Son of God never wasted a moment of His time. He was no idler finding a place of rest in some unoccupied and empty moment. No! I assure you, No. It was therefore not idleness nor loitering of curiosity which led Him to take His seat one day in the temple where He could look at the great chest with its trumpet-like mouth into which the people put their contributions, their offerings unto God. That He should sit there and watch and carefully note how the people gave, the manner of their giving; that He should do this so that the record of His observation has been written in all the languages of earth, that the rich gave of their abundance without an element of sacrifice and that a poor widow gave only a mite, giving it out of her deep poverty, but gave all that she had; and that the mite in His mind outweighed in moral value the whole sum of what the rich had given; this stopping aside to view and comment on the attitude of the people to the treasury in the temple is the clearest and most definite testimony He could make of the interest He feels today in the spirit and manner in which Christians hold their substance from His hand, how far they feel it to be their privilege as well as obligation to deny themselves and be liberal and rich with Him.

The matter of giving is at bottom a moral and spiritual test.

Many Christians count it no sacrifice to give largely for that which gives them the return of satisfaction, of personal comfort or joy. They spend it on themselves, considering self always first, giving self the benefit of lavish expenditure and economizing on God.

The Christian who refuses to give to the Lord, who holds back on the plea of economy bears witness that his heart is not right with God and that his appreciation of the salvation which for a while robbed heaven of its glory, goes no greater length than the lip which professes what the heart does not feel.

We are here as the stewards of God. We are here to give liberally and that liberality is measured not alone by the amount but by the impulse of the heart, the quickness of the hand and the spirit in which the gift is made.

We are here to win souls for Christ, to bring them to Him that He may save them. As of old wherever He came they sought out the sick, the lame, the blind, the leper and the halt that they might but touch the hem of His garment and be healed, we likewise are to seek the sin sick, the spiritually blind, the morally paralyzed, the social leper, those who are undone and lost and bring them with the hands of faith and prayer and lay them at His feet. We are to speak the simple word and tell them to touch Him with the touch of faith, to believe and “only believe” and they shall be saved.

We are to speak this word of hope and invitation on the street corner, in the seat of cars, in the office, in the store, wherever and whenever the door of opportunity is opened by the Lord. A word spoken in season how good it is. It is like apples of gold in pictures of silver. (See Pr. 25:11)

We are here as Christians to do whatever our hand finds to do. We are to do it with all our might, for the night cometh when no man can work, we are here to mean business for God, and we shall be examined at the Judgment Seat of Christ for the way in which we have endeavored to fill our mission as Christians.

It is for this we shall appear at the Judgment Seat of Christ.

III. *At this Judgment Seat our Lord will reveal Himself as very God and each Christian will have to give a faithful and intimate account of himself or herself to Him as such.*

From all eternity He was God, God the Son and God the Word. From all eternity He was in the "form" of God, and therefore the visibility, the outgoing and forth putting of God; so that a prophet writes:

"... whose goings forth have been from of old, *from everlasting.*" (Mic. 5:2)

He was ever the utterance of the eternal silence as He had been the revelation of the eternally unseen. He was the commanding energy which vocalized creation and sent the universe upon its course. By Him were all things made, and without Him, apart from Him, was not one thing made that was made. (See John 1:3) He is and was the reason of all things. By Him all things were and are upheld. In Him all things subsist. He was and is the accent of Godhead. The Father originates, the Spirit executes, but the Son translates the will and the purpose of Godhead. Incarnation was one of His mightiest acts.

As Son He took of the seed of a virgin woman and created a human nature, a nature consisting of spirit, soul and body. He united this nature to His unchangeable, eternal personality. Thus constituted He had two natures distinctly human and divine in one body and one person forever. In this embodied humanity He walked the earth *God manifest in the flesh*, serving the Father unfailingly as His eternal Son and yet, always, as actual man, real man and true God.

He was a man among men, eating and drinking with publicans and sinners, showing forth His interest in and compassion for men; and yet, there were times when the deity in Him revealed itself unconsciously through the thin texture of His spotless flesh. If as God He lived in humanity, as God He died in that humanity. By virtue of His humanity as God He was able to know and understand humanity. By virtue of His humanity He was able to taste the bitter draught of death for man.

Only God can atone to God; but as the atonement is in behalf of man it must be by man. Therefore although He was God He became man that through His death as man He might atone as *God for man*.

As God and man He rose from the dead. As God and man He ascended to heaven. As God and man He took His seat upon the throne where at the Father's right hand He had sat from all eternity, clothed Himself with the glory He had had with Him before the world was and sits on that throne today as the God who is real man, as the man who is true and very God.

In the hour when His Judgment Seat is set each Christian will be summoned to meet Him, not only as the crucified and risen man, the Saviour of all who own Him, but as living God and eternal Judge.

Each Christian must give an account to Him.

You cannot give an account for me.

I cannot give an account for you.

You must give an account for yourself.

I must give an account for myself.

That word "account" means "speech," "narrative," "reason."

We will have to make our speech to Him, give a narrative of our lives as Christians. We shall have to give a reason for what we did and what we did not do. We shall have to tell Him why we neglected His Holy Word, the exercise of prayer, the house of God; and why again and again we refused to meet the responsibility of the profession we made or the service into which He called us.

Everything will come out in that all searching light.

The good and the bad will come out.

In that hour our souls will be like the wax cylinder of the phonograph. The slightest accent of the voice is marked on the cylinder. Long after the voice has ceased, after the lips are turned to dust, the very word and the very tone in which it was spoken may be reproduced and heard in all its original force and clearness. Every word you have spoken in your life is recorded on your soul, every deed and back of deed and word every thought, impulse, intent and purpose.

Now and then the yesterdays come back to you, the outline of a landscape through which you have passed, the breath from off a mountain peak gleaming with the touch of morning light, or a draught of salt sea air blown in by ocean winds, a face that looks at you across the crowd and passes on, some roadway, some sylvan spot where you drove or walked in company with those you loved, a careless word you spoke on easy tongue, some impulse that rose but never moved beyond the half veiled purpose and the plan—this is not mere memory, the kaleidoscope turning of the brain, but the soul rising up to witness for or against itself as its own indelible recorder.

But stop! Note this! You can take the wax roll and shave off the impressions so that they may no longer confront you.

There is a way in which the sins and failures, the short-comings and the mistakes of your life as a Christian may be removed from your soul. One way in which these things may not be known, may not confront you at the Judgment Seat of Christ, and that way—*Confession*; as it is written:

“If we (Christians) confess our sins, he is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.” (1 John 1:9)

Confessed sins will not appear at the Judgment Seat of Christ.

Unconfessed sins will be revealed and will weigh the scales of judgment in relation to our work and service.

O that I could impress you as Christians with the necessity of confession.

The Romanist goes to confession. He bares all things. He pours all out in the ears of the listening priest. The priest gives him what he claims to be full and complete absolution.

You need to go to confession. You need to pour your heart out into the ears of the listening priest, not in the ears of any priest on earth, no such confession is warranted of God. The doctrine is the invention of man. The claim to give absolution is treason to God and wicked blasphemy. You have a priest. That priest is in heaven. He is your risen Lord and Saviour. He is in heaven within the veil, seated upon the throne a high priest after the order of Melchizedek. He is there to act on your behalf. This is His great and ever *unfinished* work. The work of redemption was finished, but His work as priest, as intercessor and advocate for His Church, for individual Christians is unceasing. His ears are ever open to hear. He is waiting always to take up our slightest petition and present it before His Father's throne. He is anxious to hear our confession. He is ready to make that confession turn to our welfare and peace.

The mode and way of this action is very simple.

Come to Him. Confess all that is upon your heart and soul. Keep nothing back. Make no attempt to exculpate or justify yourself. Give up the idea of seeking scapegoats for your own responsible failure. Tell the truth at any cost to your pride. Take sides with the Lord against yourself. Put your confession free and full into His hands and leave it there. He will take that confession and spread it before the Father. He will say to the Father:

“O Father, long ago and anticipately I died for these very sins here so fully confessed. The confession bears witness of the believer's faith in me, his sorrow over sin and his desire to walk in fellowship with Thee. I claim the forgiveness and the cleansing of this believer, not as an alien and rebel, but as a stumbling child of Thine. I claim forgiveness and cleansing in the value of my blood and according to the terms of the everlasting covenant wherein Thou didst pledge to give them unto me and fulfill my will concerning them.”

The Father hears the priestly and interceding plea and because He is faithful and just to His covenant He will forgive the confessing believer and cleanse him from all unrighteousness, as it is written: “If we confess our sins, he (the Father) is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.”

There is immense moral and spiritual value in this act of confession. As you confess, as you bring to light the evil in you and judge it with the judgment of God you will learn more and more to hate it and turn away from it.

At this Judgment Seat all things will be adjusted by the Lord. All things will be righted and regulated.

If anyone owes you a debt, it will have to be acknowledged and paid. If a Christian has wronged you in any fashion, hurt you by an idle word or the spreading of a false and irresponsible report, such an one will have to apologize to you before high heaven and the assembled host; and all this is in the nature of the case, for the Son of God Himself has said here in relation to this world:

“Therefore if thou bring thy gift to the altar, and there rememberest that thy brother hath ought against thee;

“Leave there thy gift before the altar, and go thy way; first be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift.” (Matt. 5:23,24)

If reconciliation and adjustment must be made here, how much more in that hour when everything is to be settled and the crooked made straight.

At that Judgment Seat no good thing you have ever done in the name of Christ and for His sake will be forgotten; as it is written:

“Therefore judge nothing before the time, until the Lord come, who both will bring to light the hidden things of darkness, and will make manifest the counsels of the hearts: *and then shall every man have praise of God.*” (1 Cor. 4:5)

The kindly smile, the cup of cold water in His name, the cheery word spoken in the fitting season, the clasp of hand by which you lifted another to firmer footing in the way of faith; all this will be remembered.

IV. *The Christian who at the Judgment Seat of Christ is judged and determined as faithful will receive a reward. He will be permitted to enter in and share the joy of the Lord.*

The “joy of the Lord” is twofold.

There is the joy which enabled Him to endure the cross, despising the shame; as it is written:

“... who for the joy that was set before him endured the cross, despising the shame ...” (Heb. 12:2)

What think you was it which made Him press forward to Jerusalem in that last and awful Passover time when He knew He was Himself to be the chosen and eternal victim? What held Him in the heart-break of that last supper when all the shadows were deepening round Him? What made Him bend His will in Gethsemane and yield it wholly to the Father’s claim, drinking the cup the Father gave Him to the very dregs even while the blood sweat dripped from His brow? What sealed His lips in the hour of trial and made Him withhold the power by which He had raised the dead and stilled the storm? Why did He not use that power in His own defense and scatter His foes as by the blast of a whirlwind? What led Him to restrain the prayer for the sixty thousand tall, strong-limbed angels the Father was ready to give Him, had He but asked it? Why did He hang in such amazingly apparent helplessness upon the cross when with but a word He gave salvation to the repentant thief dying by His side and opened paradise to the fresh believing soul? Why did He endure the agony, the horror, all the untranslatable woe but partially expressed in the universe-splitting cry as of one forsaken? What gave Him impulse and furnished Him strength whereby He not only endured the cross, but rising in moral grandeur and balanced conscience above its shame, endured it, despised it, and counted it as naught?

There is but one answer.

And this is the answer—“*The joy that was set before Him.*” The joy through that agony, that anguish and shame of becoming your Redeemer, your Saviour and mine.

It must be a joy no tongue can tell, no mind conceive—the joy of unlimited power. To be able to speak and by a word create a world, or send a lot of shining systems flashing on their course; but to Him such a joy is not comparable to the joy of recreating a human soul, filling it with divine life, the divine nature, linking it to the eternal Godhead and making that soul one with Himself in eternal Sonship before the Father’s throne.

This is the joy He saw might be His on the other side of the cross, the joy of taking the place of the First man, becoming the Second man and the new, the perfect, the eternal life-giving Head of the fallen race of man.

For the sake of that joy He endured the cross, endured the agony, the hiding of the Father’s face, rising above all the stinging, smiling, mockery of the crowd and all the shame, the piercing sorrow of the bloody and torturing gibbet.

He has illustrated this joy that held Him fast to the course He chose and all the horrors He at last endured in the wondrous threefold parable which He spoke.

He has illustrated it in the shepherd who having lost his sheep went out to seek it, found it, placed it on his

shoulder, carried it back to the fold, then called together his neighbors to rejoice with him because he had found the wandering sheep he had mourned as lost.

He saw you as the wandering sheep out on the mountains cold and bare, the mountains of sin and shame. He saw you wandering amid the deep defiles, He heard the growl of the seeking wolves and the hiss of the hooded serpents of sin; He saw the precipices, the sharp rocks, and the bottomless pit whither your footstep led and He came down to seek you. The thought of finding you, lifting you to the shoulder of His strength and bearing you home to the Father's fold filled Him with joy, hastened His feet to find the cross and gave Him strength to be nailed thereon for you.

He illustrates His joy in the woman who lost her piece, lighted her candle, swept the house diligently, found the missing coin, then bade her neighbors come in and rejoice with her because that which had been lost had been found again.

He saw you as a coin of the realm, as an infinite value of God, stamped with His image, but no longer a medium of exchange or circulation for Him, fallen into some by and hidden corner, a lost value, lost to God and the best uses of yourself. To die and on the basis of His death to found a Church, send it out like the woman with the lighted candle of the Word in the energy of the Spirit and in His name to seek for worthful but lost and helpless souls, find them and make them of infinite value to God that they might pass and repass revealing His image and be returned at last to the treasury of heaven, that was the joy which held Him where nails otherwise would have had no power. This was the joy that despised the shame.

He illustrates His joy in the story of that father whose son turned his back upon the goodly home, spent all he had in riotous living, sank down amid the swine, and lower than they, came to himself, thought of the father and the far away home, turned his face thitherward with beating heart and trembling step to seek no better place than that of a hired servant amid the servants he once had ruled and suddenly beheld that father coming to meet him with outstretched arms and loving kiss; that father who said so that all the world in every tongue has heard it since: "And bring hither the fatted calf, and kill it; and let us eat, and be merry: For this my son was dead, and is alive again; he was lost, and is found." (Luke 15:23,24)

You who now believe were that anticipated son He foresaw. He saw you as one who had turned his back on the Father's house; as one who had no higher function than to feed the swine, the beast appetites and passions which throng and crowd and thrust their hungry demands of the flesh upon the soul. To die upon the cross, pay your debt to justice; yea, all the debt you owed, rise again and have power to arrest you, awaken you, bring you to yourself, give you vision of the Father's house on high, make your soul to turn and seek the Father's face in willingness to be a servant amid all the servants of His will, and then fling round you the embrace of the Father's love, bring you into fellowship with Him on the basis of that sacrificial death of the cross, clothe you with the seamless robe of the divine righteousness, give you the ring of the endless life and cause you to be shod with the preparation of the Gospel of peace, this was the joy He would drink out of the dregs of agony the cross had in store for Him.

Never forget it! the joy set before Him, the joy which made Him endure the cross and despise the shame was the joy of being your Saviour and mine.

But there is yet another and climacteric joy set before Him, the joy which has enabled Him to endure with patience His exile to the Father's throne. That joy is announced in the Father's promise.

After His resurrection and ascension to the throne the Father bade Him sit there till He should make His enemies His footstool.

He promised Him He should come back to this world and sit upon His holy hill of Zion as King of the Jews as it is written in the second psalm:

"Yet have I set (that is, I will set) my king upon my holy hill of Zion." (Ps. 2:6)

He was crucified as the King of the Jews. He will come back to be enthroned as the King of the Jews.

Not only of the Jews but of the Gentiles; as again it is written in that second psalm:

"Ask of me, and I shall give thee the heathen for thine inheritance, and the uttermost parts of the earth for thy possession." (Ps. 2:8)

Consider what a joy it will be for Him to come back as the King of the Jews!

Recall that scene in Herod's guard room where they threw an old cloak upon His shoulders, a soldier's used and

soiled cloak, bowed the knee before Him, mocked, spit upon and abused Him. Think of the people, His own people whom He came to save, repudiating Him, sending Him to the cross, clamoring for a robber and honoring him in His stead.

Think of that writing above His head: “. . . JESUS OF NAZARETH THE KING OF THE JEWS.” (John 19:19) and placed there not for coronation but as accusation.

What a joy will it be for Him to come with all His cohorts of splendor to make that writing not a shame but glory, not an accusation but a verification.

What an hour that will be when the elect and repentant Jews delivered from the tyranny and terror of the wild beast King and His merciless scourging shall look upon Him whom their fathers pierced and own Him as Messiah, Lord and God, the Holy One of Israel, their own anointed King. What a joy it will be to Him who was whipped and gibed and hung on a robber's cross to come back, not only as the Son and heir of David's throne, but as King of kings and Lord of lords, the God of all the earth.

What joy it shall be to enthrone Himself at Jerusalem, to sit on Mount Zion and for a thousand golden years to administer righteousness and truth to the glory of God the Father, and to the far-reaching and measureless blessing of men. This will be the consummate joy of the Lord.

The Christian who has passed his civil service examination at the Judgment Seat of Christ will be invited to share that joy.

The Lord will say to him:

“. . . Well done, good and faithful servant; thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: *enter thou into the joy of thy lord.*” (Matt. 25:23)

Here as plainly as language can put it, the Lord's power and authority to appoint rulers on the earth is His joy. That appointment of rulership is the declaration that He is acting in His office as King; that the region and sphere of appointment is the kingdom. *Acting as King on the earth then is His joy.*

The faithful Christian will share this joy by being appointed a ruler in the earthly or millennial kingdom.

Thus it is evident that rulership with Christ on earth is not a common but restrictive privilege, restricted to those who are faithful, to whom the Lord can say specifically, “Well done, good and faithful servant.”

One of the joys in that joyful sharing of the joy of Christ will be the privilege, not only of rulership, but sitting at the feet of the King Himself, and from time to time, listening as He shall unfold the written Word which long ago, He Himself as the living Word, inspired; for in letters of light I read this rare and wondrous affirmation:

“And it shall come to pass in the last days, that the mountain of the LORD'S house shall be established in the top of the mountains, and shall be exalted above the hills; and all nations shall flow unto it.

“And many people shall go and say, Come ye, and let us go up to the mountain of the LORD, to the house of the God of Jacob; and *He will teach us of his ways*, and we will walk in his paths: for out of Zion shall go forth the law, *and the word of the LORD from Jerusalem.*” (Isa. 2:2,3)

Who can measure the joy of listening to His divine and human voice as He shall unfold the first chapter of Genesis and tell the story of His creative activity; that hour when with His own spoken Word, and as Himself the Word, He set the heavens and the earth in their course; the six days making this world into the dwelling place of man and the long ordained arena of redemption, the revelation of the love of God.

What a joy to have Him take up the book of Daniel, verify each written prophetic word, the deeps of meaning in each impacted symbol, and on the dust of broken empires make manifest how through all the tortuous and bloody cycles of their history His hand was steadily guiding the march of events till they culminated in that kingdom of stone of which He Himself is basic rock and apex.

What joy to hear Him expound the Gospel of John and from every gleaming splendor of His now fully manifested deity justify the opening words of that Gospel: “In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, *and the Word was God*” (John 1:1); hear Him affirm the truth of John in that wide open and bottomless phrase: “No man hath seen God (the Father) at any time; *the only begotten Son*, which is in the bosom of the Father, he hath declared him.” (John 1:18)

What a moment when He shall fully reveal the book of Revelation, the apocalyptic radiance of fulfilled and still

fulfilling glories.

O the joy of walking with Him through the sacred ways of Palestine, sitting with Him as did the disciples of old, and with those very disciples again upon the brow of Olivet, listening while He unbares the deeper secrets of the cross, the countless eternity, the mysteries and the endless wonders of redeeming grace.

Think of it! The joy of being fed with knowledge, of having veil after veil of mystery taken away and finding the reason, the wisdom, the love and the glory in all the providences of God, seeing the good always behind the evil, finding the straightness, the directness and the perpendicularity of the divine dealings behind all the complications of the wrath of man, the ingenious malignancy of the devil and the apparent contradictions of the way.

Surely this will be entering into His joy and sharing it. Beyond question this will be rich and royal reward, to reign as kings, to rule with Him, to take the place of associate and interceding priests, to be the chamberlains who shall attain access for others to His welcoming and enriching presence.

Ah! to be kings who shall rule creation's ways and priests who shall lead and intone creation's praise; to be the sharers of His earthly kingdom and to rejoice with joy exceeding in His joy.

V. The Christian who shall not be found faithful will suffer loss. He cannot enter into the joy of the Lord.

Those who have preached and by their preaching have built nothing better than wood, hay and stubble on the foundation of Christ will be judged as unfaithful stewards of the Word of God.

At that Judgment Seat the preachers who have been willing to make the Church a rubbish heap will be fully revealed. Men who have mixed law and grace, the righteousness of God with the righteousness of man; who have preached prohibition, socialism and state legislation; like Lot, have endeavored to clean up Sodom, and like Lot in Sodom have vexed their righteous but unspiritual souls with their daily and manifested inability to keep it clean.

O what rubbish heaps some churches are!

Everything under heaven preached but the Gospel of the Grace of God. The life of Christ proclaimed, but not His death, evolution from below instead of regeneration from above, the first birth and not the second, appeals made to the inhering, self-redemptive powers in man instead of exhortation to claim redeeming blood. Everywhere the watchword, "Toleration." The right to think and go as you please in matters of religion; modern thought and not first century thought, the word of man and not the Word of God, goodness taught and not Godliness; the present life the only life worth while, one religion as good as another: Romanism which teaches an earthly priesthood and a continually sacrificed Christ as good as Protestantism which teaches one sacrifice once for all and one priest alone and in heaven; Judaism which denies the deity of Christ and looks upon Him as a cool deceiver or a weakling failure, and Christian Science which denies the Trinity, the personality of God, the fact of sin and death and owns Jesus simply as an idea and no longer a fact, just as good as any other system that makes use of the name of God; Christ Himself owned as a moralist, at best a reformer and never a personal and only Saviour of men, the Bible not the exclusive Word of God and by no means the only revelation of God to man.

O the rubbish heaps some churches are!

All sorts of means used to draw the people, street cleaners with their band, base ball experts to talk on the benefit of physical sobriety, regular habits and cleanliness, lectures, moving show pictures, ice cream suppers, dramatic entertainments, social clubs, military companies, minstrel shows, burlesques and dancing.

All this is wood, hay and stubble.

Like wood, hay and stubble, it is big, bulks greatly, gives the idea of being busy, occupied, doing things; but like wood, hay and stubble, the bigger the bulk the bigger the bonfire it will make; for all such religious rubbish will be burned away on the day of the Lord. Not only so, multitudes of those who are brought into the churches, who become its members give no sign of a change of life, give no evidence of spiritual income and spiritual outgo, who are in reality as lifeless as wood, hay and stubble; who have swelled the list of "conversions" and have made a good numerical showing in annual reports, these will be shown on the day of the Lord as elements of churchly rubbish, and witness of the worthlessness of the work of those who "added" them to the Church.

The preachers who in spite of all the blindness and blundering of their wood, hay and stubble work have been really regenerated, have had some element of divine life, the foolish and deceived workers who have mistaken quantity for quality, will in that hour when they stand at the Judgment Seat of Christ be accused of unfaithfulness to their trust and shall suffer loss. None of these shall enter into and share the joy of the Lord. They cannot take part

in the kingdom on the earth.

Christians who have refused to give of their substance; who have been willing to spend it on themselves, but not on God; that class of Christians who are always revolting against “expense” in the Church and Judas-like are continually talking of “this waste,” these shall miss the joy of the Lord.

Christians who live notoriously and intentionally inconsistent lives; who openly dishonor the name of Christ; who are impervious to spiritual appeal; who claim the assurance of salvation; who no doubt really believe, but refuse to bring forth the things which accompany salvation, these shall suffer loss. Amiable Christians, decent Christians, Christians who always go to church, but never do anything for Christ; who sit still on the cushioned seats of easy security and repeat to themselves as complacent justification, “not of works, lest any man should boast” (See Eph. 2:9)—

Think of it! Redeemed by blood, made partakers of the divine nature, indwelt by the Holy Ghost, linked up to a risen Christ, claiming all the guarantees of salvation; and yet, never doing anything for Him who has done all things for them.

O the pitiableness of it. *Redeemed and doing nothing for Christ.*

And these all shall suffer loss, the loss of what they might have had. They will miss the “well done.” They cannot enter into the joy of the Lord. They will have no part in the kingdom of the thousand years on earth. During the thousand years they will be in the kingdom, but in heaven, in the Holy City, and not on earth.

VI. *The Judgment Seat of Christ will have a twofold consummation.*

It will continue for three years and a half and then Satan, the Devil, will be cast out of heaven.

There need be no astonishment at the suggestion of the Devil being in heaven. He is the prince of the powers of the air, the head of the hierarchy of evil spirits and angels who occupy the dark void surrounding the earth.

That Satan has access to the presence of the Lord is revealed in the first chapter of the book of Job. He comes into the presence of the Lord and accuses Job. This is his role. He is both an accuser and a slanderer. He is prosecuting attorney for righteousness. He will be there to accuse the brethren. Then will be seen the advantage of confessing to the Lord down here. Whatever has been so confessed down here cannot appear up there. But Satan will bring to light every unconfessed sin and failure on the part of the Christian. Those who have been faithful, against whom he can bring no accusation will overcome him by the blood of the Lamb and the word of their testimony. They will meet the charges he shall make by an appeal to the redeeming and cleansing power of the blood and to the record of their faithfulness in testimony when here. He will be finally cast out into the earth and his angels with him; as it is written :

“And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world: he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him.

“And I heard a loud voice saying in heaven, Now is come salvation, and strength, and the kingdom of our God, and the power of his Christ: for *the accuser of our brethren* is cast down, which accused them before our God day and night.

“And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their testimony; and they loved not their lives unto the death.” (Rev. 12:9-11)

That the Judgment Seat of Christ will last three years and a half and that the casting out of Satan is the terminal point of the Judgment Seat of Christ is demonstrated by the fact that Antichrist, the man of sin who will be reigning on the earth after the Lord has translated the Church to heaven and set up the Judgment Seat, will enter into a covenant or alliance with the Jews in Palestine for seven years (called in the prophecy of Daniel “one week” (See Dan. 9:27); that is, a period of seven, and by the context signifying years). In the midst of the seven years (that is at the end of three years and a half) he breaks his alliance with the Jews; now it is at this very point of breakage he exalts himself with greatest power. An examination of Revelation thirteenth will show that it is after Satan has been cast out that he himself gives all his own power to the “beast,” or Antichrist. The casting of Satan out of heaven then is coincident with the exaltation to power of the man of sin; and as this exaltation takes place in the midst of the week or at the end of three years and a half and during that three years and a half Satan is represented in heaven accusing the brethren, and this accusation implies and includes a trial before a judge, then evidently during that three years and a half the Judgment Seat of Christ has been in session; that long at least, and as much longer as may

be the lapse of time between the moment when the Church is taken up and the Antichrist enters into his seven years covenant with apostate Jews.

During the final three years and a half on earth Satan will sway the whole world through this man of sin, the son of Perdition, the world's last Kaiser, the Antichrist.

Then will come the climax. Christ and His translated and adjudged saints will descend in manifested glory to the Mount of Olives to execute judgment on the kingdom of Satan, overthrow iniquity and set up the reign and rule of righteousness.

All the saints will come with Him; for it is written:

"... this honour have all his saints." (Ps. 149:9)

But, after the judgment of the nations, those who are not to share in the earthly kingdom will, and in the nature of the case, return to the upper city and remain there during the thousand years.

Rulership and participation with Christ during the thousand years on earth is wholly and altogether a matter of reward. It is for those to whom at the Judgment Seat our Lord shall say:

"... Well done, thou good and faithful servant:" (Matt. 25:21).

VII. *Christ as Judge is already imminently before the door of the Church.*

This is the Divine and Holy Ghost way of saying that the coming of Christ for His Church is imminent.

So imminent is it that the Holy Ghost says He is before the door. If the door should be opened the Church would find herself face to face with Him, not only as her Saviour but as her righteous Judge.

And this is the announced order; as it is written:

"For the time is come that judgment must begin at the house of God:" (I Peter 4:17).

While many predicted events are between us and the appearing of Christ in glory, many things which form the burden of prophetic warning and find their amplified accent in our Lord's discourse and are uttered and illuminated for us in the parenthetic chapters of Revelation, those terrible chapters which extend from the sixth to the nineteenth, between us and the coming of the Lord *for* the Church, there is not a single foreannounced event.

It may be at any hour and therefore *at any moment*.

He has only to speak, the door will be opened.

According to the Word of God the testimony of the Son of God and the corroborative and unbroken testimony of the Apostles, *there is not the thickness of tissue paper between us who are Christians and the Judgment Seat of Christ.*

In the light of this tremendous judicial immanency the corollary of the present opportunity is immensely self-evident.

As Christians we ought to arouse.

We ought to make our calling and election sure. (See II Peter 1:10)

What an unspeakable experience it would be if before morning we should be summoned to the Judgment Seat of Christ and learn sooner or later that we could not pass the examination with honor to ourselves nor glory to the Lord!

The Apostle John speaks of being put to shame in that hour.

O what disaster, what shame if for the sake of a dance, a game of cards, a glass of wine, a night in the theatre; what a disaster if for the sake of self pleasure, self gratification of any sort, an unwillingness to be strong and steadfast and to stand for truth, a compromise and failure by the way; what disaster, what indescribable shame if we should find we were shut out from that golden hour, that splendid sweep of a thousand heaven illuminated years.

It is time to awake and let go the grip upon the things of earth; time to let the vision of heaven and heavenly things enter in and possess the soul; time to let go the handfals of dust we call our plans, plans already slipping through our loosening fingers and falling into the ever opening trench men call a grave; time to realize God in our daily experience, be as conscious of God as we are of the winds that blow or the heat that burns, or the

circumstance that disturbs, hinders or makes us turn; time to arouse because should the voice call and the hand of power lift us to the judgment seat we should be ready without hesitation and wholly unafraid to answer and say:

“Here Lord am I.”

To you who are unsaved listen to the word of warning: If Christ should come tonight, or tomorrow you would be left behind to certain woe and sorrow which even the symbols given of God fail fully to reveal. At the last you would die. For a thousand years you would be held in the prison house of the underworld. Then would come the second resurrection, the second death. As a forever disembodied soul you would pass out into eternity where the cry of anguish would ring through the endless and hopeless darkness, “My God, my God, why hast Thou forsaken me?”

Hear me, I pray! Get into Christ, let Christ get into you. Take God at His Word, believe the record, stand on the promise, offer Christ as your sacrifice, claim Him as your substitute; say, “O God, death is my doom and death is my due; but, Thou hast given Thy Son for such as I. Accept the judgment which fell on Him as though it had fallen on me. By His bloody pains, His anguish and His woe, let me go free. Accept me in His name, make me Thy child and Thine forever more.”

Say that and mean it, and quickly as you say it God will accept and save you.

God forbid you should trifle! God forbid anyone of you here in spite of the love of God, the blood of Christ, the call of the Gospel, the conviction of the Spirit and the prayers of those who love you, God forbid you should be among those in eternity who shall take up the cry, not the cry of adoration and praise from the lips of the blood-washed and enraptured hosts, but the cry wrenched from the sunless souls of the unredeemed, that unspeakably awful cry which shall make a universe to quiver—“Lost! Lost! We are forever lost”—God forbid it.

VI
THAT BLESSED HOPE

The Blessed Hope

MY theme tonight is, “The Second Coming of Our Lord Jesus Christ, the BLESSED HOPE of the Church.”

My text is Saint Paul’s epistle to Titus, second chapter and thirteenth verse:

“Looking for that blessed hope, and the glorious appearing of the great God and our Saviour Jesus Christ.”

The text may be rendered:

“Expecting that blessed hope, and the manifestation of the glory of our great God and Saviour Jesus Christ.”

The text is preceded by a context of several verses. I shall quote them inclusive of the text.

“For the grace of God that bringeth salvation hath appeared to all men,

“Teaching us that, denying ungodliness and worldly lusts, we should live soberly, righteously, and godly, in this present world;

“Looking for that blessed hope, and the glorious appearing of the great God and our Saviour Jesus Christ.” (Titus 2:11-13)

In presenting this theme I shall consider,

First, the doctrine of grace.

Second, the grace of God has been manifested.

Third, the grace of God brings salvation to all men.

Fourth, the grace of God teaches those who accept salvation what to deny.

Fifth, the grace of God teaches those who are saved how to live in this present age or world.

Sixth, the grace of God sets before those of us who are saved the hope which the Spirit calls, “blessed.”

Seventh, grace teaches us the attitude we should hold in relation to this blessed hope.

The grace of God!

This is an immense phrase.

Immense because it links the word “grace” to the name and title—God.

God is *the God at grace*.

Grace in its simplest definition is “free favor,” “unmerited, undeserved favor.”

The grace of God is the free, full, unmerited, undeserved favor of God; that favor which includes all there is of love, mercy, blessing, benefit of every sort, and bestowed on man without money and without price; blessing, mercy, and measureless love which no man in any wise, under any circumstances could merit, deserve, buy or earn in any way or fashion whatsoever.

This is grace, and grace of God.

This grace of God was manifested in and through His Son, our Lord Jesus Christ.

Grace was poured into His lips. He spoke words of loving compassion and tender sympathy. His deeds coordinated His words. He gave sight to the blind, hearing to the deaf, speech to the dumb. He made the lame man to leap as a hart, cleansed the leper with a word, raised the dead and to those who were weary and heavy laden He said, "Come unto me and rest." (See Matt. 11:28)

All that He said and did, He said and did in the name of the Father and as sent by Him; so that His words and deeds were the revelation of the Father's heart and the manifestation of His grace.

Every time His feet touched the earth they gave it a benediction, every time He breathed the air He sweetened it and every word He spoke filled it with music; yet, overflowing with love and mercy, perfect as His life was in the demonstration of the Father's grace and proof that Heaven looked with yearning and compassion upon a world of sin, it is not the grace to which the Spirit draws our attention here. The grace we are invited to contemplate is not His life on earth among men but His death, forsaken of God upon the cross.

On the cross our Lord Jesus Christ died as a sacrifice for sin.

By that sacrificial death He satisfied the law, the government and the being of God.

He satisfied and honored the *law* of God by meeting and paying the penalty of the law which said, ". . .the soul that sinneth, it shall die." (Ezek. 18:4,20)

He honored God's *government* by recognizing the law as coming from the hand of God as the lawgiver of the universe, and therefore as its ruler, administrator, and governor.

He honored the *being* of God by acting as the representative of man in sin, sin of nature and sin of transgression, thus appealing to and drawing forth from God all His legal and essential antagonism to sin till the heat and wrath and hate of it poured down as onrushing sweeps of divine and eternal Judgment.

The death of Christ was not academic, nor merely dramatic. It was not accidental nor incidental, but integral, constitutional, the very fibre and make-up of the purpose and predetermination of God. The cross was the center of the eternal counsels before the foundation of the earth was laid. The death of Christ was motivated and ordained before His birth.

By the cross the righteousness of God was displayed.

By the cross God's hatred of sin, His unchangeable wrath and pitiless, unending determination of ceaseless judgment against it and punishment of it were so proclaimed and made manifest that with law, government and being honored, He could hold back judgment from a guilty, sin-loving world and deal with it in undeserved favor, mercy, and grace.

Thus was the *grace of God* proclaimed by *the wrath of God*.

Out of the wrath and hatred of God against sin; by the inexorableness of that law which sheathed its sword of justice deep into the quivering soul of the divine victim; by the holiness, perfectness and absolute integrity of the Father's essential being which made Him turn His back upon His Son, turning away from Him until the blackness and darkness of the infinite forsaking fell upon Him and drowned Him under its overflowing billows, the grace of God was made manifest.

This grace of God brings salvation to all men.

The salvation is threefold.

It is salvation from the *penalty* of sin, the *power* of sin, and *identification* with and *participation* in the multiplied, resplendent glories of a Coming Christ.

Salvation from the *penalty* of sin is to be had by claiming our Lord Jesus Christ as a personal substitute.

Under the Levitical law the Jew who wished to be ceremonially clean from the judgment of sin selected a lamb, put a rope about its neck, led it to the priest, put his hand upon its head and confessed his sins, the knife of the priest leaped forth, the throat of the victim was cut, the blood was shed and the offerer pronounced clean, went forth free of judgment.

Just so you are to look back by faith to the cross of Christ (and faith can link you to that cross quicker than wireless telegraphy can fling its message across the intervening seas); you are to claim the death of Christ upon the cross as your sacrifice for sin; then you are to turn, face God and say to Him:

“O God, no matter though I may deem myself the whitest and finest of men; no matter though those who know me may testify that not a spot or charge is against me, I accept the estimate which Thou hast formed of me, that I am a sinner both by nature and transgression. I own and accept Thy judgment that I ought to die; but, I offer to Thee now the sacrifice which Thou Thyself hast provided. I claim Thy Son crucified and dead on yonder cross as my substitute.”

Immediately God the Father will accept the death of His Son as though you had died. He will accept the judgment and the billowy downrush of wrath that fell on Him as though it had fallen on you and lo! you are *legally* clean, not guilty, forgiven, justified and accepted as righteous and so presented before that court where holiness is the fashion.

And this is undeserved mercy and free favor. This is grace, pure and unqualified grace. You have no righteousness of your own. You could not even dare to offer it to God. Your best righteousness in His sight was no better than unclean, filthy rags. He did not ask goodness of you. God does not want goodness. He wants *Godness*, His own quality and character.

Just as you, if you have respect for yourself cannot afford to associate with one whose character is not equal to your own, neither can God accept in fellowship with Himself those who are not holy, spotless, and pure. “Follow peace with all men, and holiness, without which no man shall see the Lord.” (Heb. 12:14). In default of that holiness you must pay the penalty in death. You never can get beyond paying of it; and since you can neither live according to the standard of God’s righteousness, nor pass beyond the liquidation of your penalty, He has provided the sacrifice for sin and will accept the death of Christ as the full payment of the penalty which is your due and will credit you with the “obedience” of Christ unto that death when you believe, that through faith you may be linked up to Him, not only as the one made sin for you, but as your righteousness, so that in Him you shall be the very righteousness of God.

Undeserved mercy and freest favor this—who can doubt it?

Grace, pure and unqualified grace this—who may dispute it?

Grace it is that saves from the *penalty* of sin.

But you need to be saved, not only from the *penalty*, but from the *power* of sin.

You can be saved from the power of sin only by a life that is superior to, and will reign above, sin.

This life is not in you by nature.

It is to be found alone in a risen Lord on the throne at the right hand of God.

You cannot buy it. You cannot earn it. There is nothing you can do will make you deserve it. It is to be had only as a gift. It is as much a gift as the sunshine which pours its flood of light upon you, as the air you breathe. And it is to be had as all other gifts of God are to be had. All the money in the world will not buy the gold of sunshine, the silver of moonlight, starlight, nor the circumambient air. You must *receive* them.

The life that overcomes sin, the life that is the power of righteousness and truth in the soul is to be received, and received by faith, simple, childlike faith; for, the wages of sin is death, but eternal life is the gift of God through our Lord Jesus Christ; and since by faith you are delivered from death and bound up in the bundle of life with the risen Christ, and are one with Him, you shall take part in the glories that are His. You shall be heir of God and *joint heir* with Christ.

This is undeserved mercy, the free, full, and unmeasured favor of God.

This is grace and grace beyond degree.

This grace and salvation by grace is offered to all men through the gospel of the grace of God and is commissioned to be preached to every creature.

This is the age of grace.

Herein is the explanation why iniquity runs riot, lawlessnesses are multiplied and sin rolls its unchecked, mad waves of sensualism and shame over all the foundation of righteousness and truth. Here is the reason why men may blaspheme the name of the Holy God, raise their hands in proud disdain of His every claim and no thunderous judgment break forth to smite them where they stand. Here is the reason why the heavens are silent, why no miracle, no intervention takes place, why no wing of angel is thrust through the blue of yonder sky: it is because

God is dealing in grace; and He and the Heaven host are waiting, silently watching to see what man will do; whether he will despise this hour of grace or turn and accept its offer ere the wheels of judgment turn.

Grace, that explains the silent God, the continued down flow of mercy, rain falling upon the just as well as upon the unjust, the wicked flourishing like the green bay tree, the continuance of the gospel and the Spirit's insistent pleading.

But, grace not only *brings* salvation, it *teaches* those who accept that salvation.

It teaches them *what to deny*.

That word "deny" is in itself a revelation.

It is a revelation either of power or weakness. He who cannot deny, who cannot say, "No," is a pitiable slave. Passions, appetites, desires like hungry beasts with lolling tongues and bloodshot eyes will rush in and leap upon him.

Here is the appetite for drink.

Days and even months may pass and the poor fool thinks himself immune, the very master and boasts his freedom, when, suddenly, it leaps upon him, clutches him by the throat and bids him yield.

If he cannot deny, if he cannot say "No," and say it with a round and ringing circle of enclosed determination, authority and power, then will he follow like an ox to slaughter led: or like swine Circe fed will wallow in his swinery a sickening slave and brute till the appetite is gorged to fulness and then is he flung down a limp, lost, helpless thing, full of self-contempt and all the agony and bitterness of biting remorse, filling himself with a thousand fresh-made pledges to resist, till again the beast leaps on him, claims him for its own and drags him still deeper in the filthy mire.

Or, it is lust, lust coming with lean and lecherous lip, clammy hands and hateful breath to poison every vein of chastity and snakelike coil about the soul.

Not always in such beastly ways as that, but in ways and fashions that take you unawares and smother you and leave you stricken, struggling, panting in the treacherous embrace; leap upon you so quickly, and for a moment seem to be so beautiful, so winsome, so appealing to all that is in you, so deceiving you and disarming you, so hypnotizing and charming you that you surrender with responding pulses and are gone before an angel of God can descend and lift you out of the mire that awakens you with its foul and pitchy smear.

But the grace of God can teach you to deny.

I saw a company of men and women terrorized by a brute beast of a dog. He saw they were afraid of him. That encouraged him to terrorize them more. He showed his white fangs, his quivering, nervous, slobbering lips till not one of the startled, fear-smitten party dared to move.

Then I saw the master come.

He looked the brute full in the eye and there was an almost cruel smile upon his lips. He walked forward indifferent to the low and warning growl, seized the beast by the scruff of the neck, heaved him up and flung him to the earth, put his feet upon the snapping jaws and with a voice that had in it the sound of a whiplash said, "lie there." Then he released him and with a howl of fear and conscious defeat the cowed beast slunk away to its kennel.

Like that I have known men to lay hold of the beast of passion, fling it down and put their feet upon its neck, bid it lie there and be still.

The grace of God taught them that. Sometimes it has been a fight, terrible, awful, straining at everything of life and hope in the soul, but grace has won.

I know men who are Mount Vesuviuses, Etnas, and Chimborazzos in themselves. They are, indeed, like burning volcanoes. Their veins are hot with inward fire, an easily provoked and maddened temper ready to blaze, to kindle into flame at a word or look, burst forth and wantonly destroy. They are always on the threshold of riotous words and impulsive acts. Anger, resentment, quick burning hate and a bitterness that for the moment would rejoice to ruin everything that opposed or antagonized them are in them like bloodhounds straining at a leash.

You would never know it, never dream it.

They are calm, self-poised and self-controlled, never for a moment under keenest provocation losing the grip

upon themselves.

The grace of God has not only given them life, but taught them.

With Paul they are able to say:

“ But by the grace of God I am what I am:” (I Cor. 15:10).

The grace of God teaches those who are saved, not only to deny ungodliness and worldly lusts, it teaches them *how to live*.

Of all the blunders a human being can make, none are so supreme as the blunder of thinking you can profess the name of Christ, be baptized, join the Church and then live and do as you please, fill your lips with evil speech and walk in by and forbidden paths.

If you be a true child of God, if regeneration be a fact in you, if you have passed into the realm of a new and spiritual genesis, if Christ be really in you, then every evil deed and treasonable speech, betraying thought or impulse will find itself opposed, rebuked by that new and inward force, a force that will proclaim you and make you in spite of your own revolt, proclaim yourself a hypocrite, a worthless thing; so that, to continue in your careless and wilfully inconsistent life you must deliberately strangle the ever-protesting voice of God in you.

Before you are saved, before you believe on our Lord Jesus Christ, the best character in the world will not avail you, it will not avail you because God is not asking for the best you can do, but for that which is absolutely perfect, for a character like His own, sinless, holy, far-flashing in hate against sin; and because you do not have it; because by nature you never can evolve it; because in default of it you were under doom of death; and because you can neither meet the demand for life, nor satisfy the demand for death, out of pure grace He provided this righteousness in Christ whereby you might be clothed and stand before Him in all the perfectness of character which He Himself requires.

No character of your own before you are saved, however good it may be, will save you. That truth needs to be repeated over and over again and sunken deep into your consciousness and the consciousness of every human being on earth; but, after you are saved, then you are to give to God the most beautiful and perfect character the eternal life committed to you can unfold.

The grace of God will teach you to live soberly, righteously, and godly in this present world. To live the life that is discreet, equipoised and balanced. It will teach you to keep your feet in the path of righteousness and truth, to live the life of godliness, to let God and Christ and all spiritual things exude from the very pores of your being; to be a contagion, not for sickness, not for impulses of the flesh, but for spiritual health, for divine vigor and all the inbreathing and outbreathing of the Holy Ghost.

You are to live in this present world (this age) an age which is against the sons of God, and to find yourself fought against and hindered; so that, time and again you will find yourself involuntarily saying, “the Christian life cannot be lived, everything is against it, it is wholly impracticable, it makes a man try to live in the air while the law of gravitation forces him to stay upon the ground.” You will find yourself saying, “I am perplexed. I am puzzled and do not know which way to turn. How can I meet my social obligations, my business responsibilities and be true to the spiritual profession I make?”

The grace of God will teach you. No matter how great the problem it will teach you how to solve it. No matter how narrow the path that leads to the Kingdom of God it will teach you how to walk in it. It will deliver you from the truth half told, an evil thing worse a thousand fold in its reaction and outward effect than a whole and barefaced lie. It will deliver you from the insincerity and purposelessness which can ruin the noblest lives. Yes, the grace of God, if you are willing, if you wish it, even if you do not deliberately hinder it will teach you how to live.

And now, this grace having brought salvation, having taught us what to deny and how to live, sets before us the hope which is to animate us, encourage us, make us more and more willing every day to listen to the admonitions of grace and hold us fast and unswervingly in the faith as the anchor holds when clouds and darkness gather and wild storms break upon the vessel's side, the hope which the Spirit specifically calls—“that blessed hope.”

It is well the grace of God should set this hope before us.

Without hope it is impossible to live.

No matter what may be your equipment, you cannot live, you cannot achieve without hope.

There are some six millions of peoples in this great city tonight. Tomorrow men and women will go forth to

meet duties, obligations, responsibilities, calls of every sort. There will be problems to solve and questions to answer that well may take the heart out of the bravest and the best. There will be burdens to be borne whose staggering weight will threaten to crush the burden-bearer to the ground.

And what is it, think you, will make this vast army arise and go forward and press on in the mighty struggle even with a smile upon the lips?

What is it, what else could it be—but hope?

Take hope away from man, the strongest, the bravest, and the best of men and despair like an octopus will thrust forth its foul and greedy tentacles and suck out the very soul of him.

Look at that man lying down utterly crushed, unnerved, full of mental darkness and soul horror. You can do nothing with him. No rebuke of yours will affect him. He is indifferent to all you say. Even if you warned him, shouted aloud his danger, he would not pick himself up out of the way of a swift advancing car. Tell him it will kill him—what does he care; indeed, he would rather die than live, and the peril is should he arise and make any effort it might be to put an end to life he can no longer endure—that *man has no hope*.

But let some one bend down and whisper in his ear the gladsome word of hope and lo! a new dawn will shine in his eyes, a new light will break across his face, he will arise, he will leap to his feet, his hands will outstretch and take on their grip, he will face the world and win.

The Christian cannot be without hope. Without hope his feet are weak, his steps are laggard and his hands drop nerveless by his side. If he has no better outlook than the things of time and sense; if the horizon does not lift and expand into promised and better tomorrows, he is defeated ere the fight of faith begins.

Grace teaches there is a hope for the Church and inclusively a hope for the Christian, an individual and corporate hope.

In no direction have there been greater blunders and more excuseless mistakes than in respect to the corporate hope, the hope of the Church.

For generations the Church has been taught the conversion of the world as its supreme, its all-inspiring and definite hope.

By the preaching of the Gospel the whole world was to be brought into subjection to the way and will of Christ. This was the hope held out to the Church.

Tonight, after twenty centuries of Gospel preaching, the world is farther away from conversion than when Christianity began.

So far from the world being overcome by the Church, the Church is rapidly being overcome by the world.

This promise of a Gospel-converted world has been the hope deferred that makes the heart sick.

It has been a disappointment that has turned to bitterness and unbelief.

And there never has been any warrant for such hope.

The Church is commanded to preach the Gospel in the whole world to every creature, and to every creature in each and every generation. It was never intended some should hear it in this generation, some more in the next, more in each succeeding generation till the whole world at last should have heard it. Never at all! There is no such thought in the commission. It was intended that every creature in each generation should hear this Gospel before he died. The whole world should hear it completely from generation to generation. None should appear at the final bar of God and plead he had never heard the tidings. The Apostle Paul affirms it had been universally heard in his day. Writing to the Colossians in one generation after the Gospel commission had been given he says, “. . . the gospel, which ye have heard, and which was preached to every creature (literally, in all creation) which is under heaven; whereof I Paul am made a minister;” (Col. 1:23). This was the divine ideal and purpose.

But while this is the age for *universal preaching*, it is not the age for *universal salvation*, in that all will not be saved.

This is the age of *restricted salvation*, it is the hour of *selective election*, even as it is the age of whosoever will may come and receive His glorious gift of salvation.

By the Gospel of His grace God is calling out here one and there another into faith and union with His Son, and they respond and receive, even as others refuse and reject.

He is seeking to call men out of this world by the offer of redemption through faith in His Son.

If you knew a ship was out there in the bay, hard and fast upon hidden reefs would you go forth, buy a lot of paint, gold leaf, and gilding, get into a lifeboat with a company of house painters and decorators and when you had reached the ship, even though you saw the water coming in over the gunwales would you begin to paint the ship in true Louis Fourteenth or Fifteenth style? Would you make the white panels still whiter? Would you put on the gilding and the gold leaf? Would you say, "On with the song and the dance?" Would you tell anybody your great hope was to save the ship, then continue to put on paint and gold leaf?

Surely you would not.

No! you would leap into that lifeboat. You would gather your sturdy men about you. You would take life lines and life preservers. When you reached the deck of the ship you would go into the saloon where a lot of women might be found dawdling over a game of bridge, and you would cry out to them warningly, the ship was sinking and they must fly for their lives to the boats in waiting. You would go into the barroom where you might find a lot of men drinking, mixing high balls and profanity, settling their bets on the ship's run, and you would cry to them, "up and flee for your lives."

God looks upon the world as a sinking ship. By the "world" is not meant the earth, but this human system, society, government and all the organized relations of man to man. The judgment of God is against it, already it is running on the rocks, the sound of the breakers may be heard, and there is a strain and quiver everywhere throughout the length and breadth of it. The tide is rising higher and just as in the days of Noah, God will suddenly loose the whole flood of long withheld judgment and sweep away the present order of things, sweeping it away forever.

He is not calling the Church to go and better the world, to paint it, decorate it, make it more beautiful and attractive, leading men more than ever to boast of it, glory in it.

The Church is not here to deceive herself with the idea that the world can be saved as it now is.

God is commanding the Church to *save men out of it*, to get them out of the old creation in Adam and get them into the new creation in Christ, get them out of the old system of the flesh into the new and eternal system of the Spirit.

No! the hope held out to the Church is not the conversion of the world by the preaching of the Gospel.

To hold out that hope is to play the Church into the hands of the Devil.

It shuts men's eyes to the terrific fact that God has already passed sentence upon the world; that He has said this present system shall come to a cataclysmic end, ". . . the world passeth away, and the lust thereof:" (I John 2:17). It shuts the eyes of men to the fact that the death of Christ is not only a sacrifice for sin, but a crime, a murder of murders and must be answered for by the world as such.

Holding out the hope of a world converted by the Gospel blinds men's eyes to the analysis God has given of it.

Listen to the analysis:

"For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, and the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world." (I John 2:16)

And these three things, lust of *the flesh*, lust of *the eyes* and *pride* of life God says, really, fundamentally constitute the world.

Take them away and the world as we see it fades from view, its activities and its "progress" come to an end.

The hope that the Church is to win the world for Christ through the Gospel blinds men to the unbroken testimony of the Holy Spirit that as the age draws to its consummation there shall be "perilous times," (I Tim. 3:1) "a form of godliness, but denying the power thereof," (I Tim. 3:5) and increasingly marked departure from spiritual things and the ways of God.

The hope of a world converted by the Gospel leads men to ignore such unmistakable and dynamic warning and to paint for themselves the vision of a world to be made growingly better. It leads men to talk about the triumph of democracy, the elevation and brotherhood of man, the establishment of free and righteous government, the abolition of war. It leads the preacher unconsciously and involuntarily to fellowship every effort of this nature. It leads him to turn his pulpit into a platform for prohibition, for purer politics. More and more he identifies himself

and his Church with the life that now is. Every day he seeks to congratulate himself and all who hear him that the world is marching on to the purple and the gold of millennial days; and yet, all the while the shadow of Anti-Christ is growing, unbelief is hiding itself under attractive and deceptive forms, the thunder of the surf grows louder and the judicial forces in the hand of God are being assembled for the awful blow that shall awake a Devil-fooled world to its final doom.

If there has been a false hope held out to the Church corporately, an equally false hope has been held out to the Christian individually.

The Christian has been taught that Heaven was his hope, and that he could get there only by way of death, the undertaker, the shroud, and the grave.

When I came to New York many years ago I went round the city looking at the different church buildings. I looked, naturally, to find the names of pastors. I could not find them. No matter what church building there was but one name upon all the structures, some of them massive and splendid, and that name always in largest letters and with wealth of gilding was the name of the undertaker. It appeared to be so settled the way to Heaven was alone by the graveyard that the undertaker seemed to be the most important personage next to death in the service and value of the Church. The churches seemed like monuments dedicated to death, they were monumental advertisements of the graveyard and the funeral end of the Christian life. The first thing I did was to have the name of that ubiquitous, respectable, but dismal personage taken off the walls of my church.

Can you conceive of anything more amazingly inconsistent, contradictory, and discordant than to have a church erected to Him whose very name is *life eternal*, and then to have the building written all over with the symbol of death?

But neither death nor Heaven are held out as the hope of the Christian.

The hope held out to the Christian and the hope held out to the Church is the *Coming of our Lord Jesus Christ into the air to take the Church up there to meet Him*.

This is proved by Saint Paul's first letter to the Thessalonians. He had taught them the Lord was coming from Heaven. He had bidden them wait for and expect Him. Some among them had died. The living were troubled lest the dead in Christ should miss the Coming.

Paul writes and tells them they are not to sorrow over their dead as others who have no hope (as those, indeed, must sorrow whose dead do not die in Christ). The Lord is coming down into the air; so far from the dead in Christ missing that great event they will be the first to realize it. The Lord will raise them first, then the living who are alive at His Coming will be changed and caught up together with them to meet the Lord. (See I Thess. 4:13-18)

The apostle exhorts them to comfort one another with these words.

They were to comfort one another with the words Paul, under special inspiration and particular revelation had written them, that the Lord was coming to raise their dead and bring them all together into His presence.

This is the hope set before them.

This is the hope set before us.

This is the hope of which he wrote to Titus, "that blessed hope." (Titus 2:13)

It is blessed because it touches this matter of the Christian dead.

Last summer I drove about a great deal in the mountains. Sometimes the road wound round and up and over lifted heights, sometimes under arching trees, by broad expanse of turquoise-tinted lake, through cloven ridges and narrow impasses where rivulets rippled in drowsy murmurs or noisy babble over rocky beds and deeper rivers slipped in silence to the waiting valleys far beyond; but wherever I drove, by lane or beaten highway I saw the memorial of the dead, in lonely churchyard, in family burial plot, in more extended cemetery near town and village. The larger the town, the larger and whiter the city of the dead and the old sorrowful refrain came to my mind:

"They that dwell upon the earth are but a handful
To those who sleep within its breast."

But I said softly, "Thank God, the day is coming when the dead shall hear a voice and rise, the day when death shall be defeated, and a grave never more be dug nor filled with human kind."

That hour of resurrection triumph will be at the Coming of the Lord.

There are three records in the New Testament wherein the story is told how Jesus raised the dead: the young maid who had just died, the young man on his way to burial, and Lazarus four days dead and corrupting.

In each of these cases the dead was raised at the *Coming of the Lord*.

The daughter of Jairus was dead and the father's heart was broken.

Jesus came. He entered the house where all were mourning. He said, "She is not dead, but sleepeth." They~ laughed Him to scorn. He put them all out (as He will put out of His house and shut out of His kingdom all who mock or make light of Him). He took the young girl by the hand and bade her rise, and straightway she rose and walked. (See Matt. 9; Mark 5; Luke 8)

A funeral procession was just turning out of the street of the City of Nain on its way to the cemetery.

The mother walked behind the open bier. She wept as with bowed head she walked; for, this was her only son and she was a widow. Much people also followed, wept, and sorrowed in sympathy with her.

At that moment Jesus and His disciples came up over the brow of the hill. He stopped the procession of the dead. He bade the young man arise. He who was dead, in obedience to the master word, sat up and began to speak. Then Jesus delivered him to his mother. (See Luke 7)

Lazarus was dead. Lazarus whom Jesus loved.

The sisters had sent for Him while even yet their brother was sick. They had warned Him that he whom He loved was grievously ill. But Jesus waited till death came, and now He approached the house of mourning. Martha met Him. She reproached Him because He had delayed, because He had not come at once in answer to their earnest pleading. She said:

"... Lord, if thou hadst been here, my brother had not died." (John 11:21)

Then it was Jesus answered in those words in which every syllable is a symphony of love, of grace, of tender compassion and infinite and Almighty assurance:

"... I am the resurrection, and the life: he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live:" (John 11:25).

He goes to the grave.

He tells *them* to roll away the stone.

He bids them do this because it is in their power to do it, and because the eternal and all-powerful God will never do what we can and what we are responsible to do.

Then with a loud voice He bids Lazarus come forth; and he that was dead, heard, lived, and came forth, but bound hand and foot with grave clothes.

And again Jesus bids them do what they could do and what because of it He had no need to do, to loose Lazarus, unbind the grave clothes and let him go (and in this the Lord illustrates the work into which the Church is called after the sinner has been spiritually raised through hearing the voice of the Lord in the Gospel—loosening the converted soul from the bonds of spiritual death, *teaching* him the truth; as it is written: "And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free." (John 8:32) Unless rightly taught the quickened and saved soul, like Lazarus, remains bound, can neither see, use the hands, nor walk aright. Teaching must come after the Gospel—*it is loosing and letting go*). (See John 11)

In each of these cases the dead was raised by the *Personal Coming of the Lord*.

It is by the Coming of the Lord, and by the Coming of the Lord alone that the dead in Christ will be raised.

If the Lord does not come Himself the dead in Christ will never be raised, resurrection will never take place.

There is not the slightest warrant in the Word of God to hope for the resurrection of the Christian dead apart from the Second, personal Coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.

Take the Second Coming out of the Book and you pack the grave clods down hard and fast upon the head of your hopelessly dead.

Take the Second Coming of Christ out of the New Testament and there is not one word of hope you can hold out that the Christian dead will ever be anything more than disembodied ghosts.

Even though they be in Heaven and with the Lord, so long as their bodies lie mouldering in the earth and part of its wind-blown dust their victory over death is only partial. The victory of Christ over death is only partial. The Devil who is the "strong man armed" (See Luke 11:21) (armed with the law which says it is appointed unto men once to die) holds them as his "goods" in his "house" of the grave. Not only that, but in so far as the Christian dead are concerned the Lord does not become for them the "resurrection and the life" He claimed; on the contrary, He becomes an amazing concrete of contradiction; for, while Himself a risen, immortal man, His resurrection and immortality seals of His own complete triumph over death, He is surrounded by ghostly beings whose bodies purchased by His blood He has not raised and whose bodiless estate bears witness that His redemption for them has not been complete; an incompleteness all the more emphasized by His own risen, immortal body. Nay! every moment that this risen body flashes forth its splendor, it proves the incompleteness of those for whom He died and testifies. The Devil has cut His victory in two and divided even honors with Him. O, no, Christians as eternal ghosts in Heaven with Christ do not become His glory but dishonor.

Because Christ is surely Coming a Second time and that Coming means the deliverance of the body of the dead Christian; because it means the Christian's complete redemption from the power of death; because it means the revelation of the Christian in an immortal glorified body like His own, the Coming of the Lord is righteously and logically held out as the blessed hope, both to the Church and individual Christian.

Not only are the Christian dead to be raised, but Christians living in that hour are to be changed, transfigured, made deathless, incorruptible, immortal.

In a moment, at the Coming of the Lord the wrinkles will disappear from the brow of age, the sick will be cured, health will leap through every vein and youth immortal shall clothe each changed, transfigured and translated saint.

This is the hope held out to us.

Blessed, indeed, or, as it means, "happy" is this hope held out to us.

It means our gathering together on the plains of light, our reunion, and our knowing one another in His presence.

If He were to come tonight the first one I should seek would be my father. I believed in him when I did not believe in God. He stood between me and the world for years. For long years he stood there; and when I went forth from his roof to make my way he laid his hand upon my shoulder and with depth of love in his tender, but never lowered eyes he said (and do you think eternity will ever make me forget it) he said, "My son, if it does not go right with you; if things are not as you hope them to be, remember so long as I live you have a home." And I banked on that. It gave me strength to stand and courage and hope in many an hour of loneliness and sad perplexity.

If the Lord were to come tonight and take me into the upper city I would go straight up to that father and tell him all over again the love he knows I bear him. Do you think I would make my mother merely a second? Impossible! She would be there and I would put my arms about them both, and how much I would thank her; for, I am here tonight and preach because she greatly prayed me into this ministry. I never sought it. I shut the door upon it. I turned away from it and would none of it, but her prayer helped to swing the door wide open and I entered into that ministry wherein the Lord Himself had called me and with strong compelling hand had bid me enter.

But tonight if I were lifted up into that glory place within the veil and looked about upon all the shining host of the blood-redeemed and looked, and looked in vain and could not recognize either my father or my mother, what meaning think you would there be in the apostle's words exhorting me to be comforted with the thought the Lord is Coming and that I shall be caught up with the risen and transfigured dead? What comfort would there be in his words for me? Surely none. Nay! Those words would be but meaningless mockery and bitterness of disappointment He Himself had wrought and made. But, since he was honest and his words are the inspiration of the Holy Ghost this promise of our Lord's return and our reunion in His presence carries in the heart of it the assurance that we shall meet and know each other then.

But we are left to no induction, no conjectural or presumptive conclusion, for the apostle writes:

"Then (that is, when the Lord comes) shall I know even as also I am known." (I Cor. 13:12)

There will be cognition as well as recognition. We shall know the generations old. I shall know Abel who first from afar through his bleeding lamb saw the bleeding and Heaven ordained victim on the cross. I shall know

Abraham, who had faith to go whither he knew not because he trusted that the God who had called him would also lead him. I shall see and know Moses, he who stood amid the flaming glories of Sinai's cloud-capped height and saw the finger of God write the law on tables of stone. I shall see David whose harp strings have evoked the songs that have filled a world with hope and consolation. I shall see and know Simon Peter, who drew his sword to defend his Lord, and John, who leaned upon the Master's breast. I shall see Paul, glorious, much suffering, Paul. I shall see and know the martyrs of succeeding years; such as Zwingli and Huss, a Savonarola who walked to the cruel stake with quiet dignity amid the falling tears and quivering hearts of a silent, grief-stricken city; Cranmer, Latimer, and Ridley, who amid the piled up, burning fagots and from their tortured bodies kindled a flame of faith and undying devotion for God. I shall know the Wesley brothers and Whitfield and see again, but glorified, the Moody, who filled the eyes of men with tears and led them with no burlesque speech nor clownish platform tricks, but a sweet, old-time Gospel and a pleading, Christ-filled spirit to the Master's feet.

It is a blessed hope because it means the Church, all genuine Christians, shall be delivered from the hour and horror of the Great Tribulation, which with swift and steady stride is coming on the earth.

Everywhere we are told from pulpit and from press the world is growing better and that days of peace and prosperity are about to fill the earth. Everywhere men have been crying peace and safety.

But the sons of God and all His apostles lift up their voices and warn against the fallacy and folly of those who talk peace when there can be no peace.

The Son of God Himself talks in terms of war and rumors of war, of famine, pestilence, and earthquake, of lawlessness multiplied, Satanic powers and miracles. He speaks of an hour when the heavens shall seem to fall, the earth to shiver and tremble as a cottage shaken by the storm, the sea and the waves roaring, the doors of the unseen world wide flung, distress of nations with perplexity and men's hearts failing them for fear for looking after the things that are coming on the earth; everywhere confusion, conflict and all the loosened might of wrong and cataclysmic climaxes in the closing hours of a cataclysmic and catastrophic age; a time so terrible none has ever been like it nor ever shall be again; a time so terrible that unless those days were actually shortened no flesh should live. (See Matt. 24:22; Mark 13:20)

The Coming of the Lord means the deliverance of the Church from all that.

You will find the scenic proof and demonstration of this in the book of the Revelation. In the fourth chapter John is caught up to Heaven at the sound of a trumpet voice as the representative and figure of the translation of the Church at the Coming of the Lord. In the fourth and fifth chapters the Church is seen under the symbol of twenty-four kingly and priestly elders enthroned in Heaven. From the sixth chapter to the nineteenth chapter you have a picture of the tribulation, the woe on earth and the mad course of the Devil incarnate Anti-Christ. Not once in all these chapters, not in a single line nor by the most faint and shadowy suggestion of the smallest fraction of an inferential hint can you see even the first outline of the Church on earth; on the contrary, in the *thirteenth* chapter and *sixth verse* you have a dynamic and corroborative declaration that during all this time the translated Church is *in Heaven*.

In the sixth verse it is written:

"And he (the beast, the Anti-Christ) opened his mouth in blasphemy against God, to blaspheme his name, and *his tabernacle, and them that dwell in heaven.*"

The tabernacle of God is the dwelling place or habitation of God.

The Church is the dwelling place or habitation of God; as it is written:

"In whom ye also (Christians at Ephesus) are builded (are being builded) together for an habitation of God through the Spirit." (Eph. 2:22)

The sixth verse of Revelation *thirteenth therefore* paints the picture of the fruitless fury of the Beast, the Anti-Christ, against the Church, and the security of the Church at that moment because *dwelling in Heaven*.

The twelfth chapter shows us the Devil cast out of the heavens and *down on the earth*, the thirteenth chapter shows us the Church taken out of the earth and enthroned in Heaven.

The Coming of Christ takes us out of the earth and puts us in Heaven; so that as Christians we shall not go through nor even enter the edge of the Great Tribulation.

And because this is so the Coming of Christ for His Church is above all others, the *blessed* hope.

It is a blessed hope because it means *immortality*.

In Scripture the words “immortal,” “immortality” are not applied to the soul, but to the body. They mean a deathless, incorruptible, pneumatical body.

They mean lifting man into the place God intended he should have.

Look at man as you see him now, sick, fainting, fallen down, and dying. The other day as I passed one of the great cemeteries I said, musingly, “What mighty mental powers have gone down into the ground there, minds that moved forces, wills that controlled vast enterprises, moulded and shaped destinies. Is that the best God could do? Set such powers to work in frail and easily shattered bodies, let them break, turn to dust, the spirit disappear and seem to be no more?”

Nay! the revelation of God’s real and infinite purpose shall be seen in the immortal bodies Jesus will give us when He shall come again. Each body shall be a storage battery, all the laws and hidden forces of the universe shall be concentrated in such a body. The nexus shall be the will. The immortal Christian shall speak and it shall be done. He will command and it shall stand fast. In this we shall be like the Son of God Himself. We shall be masters whether on land or sea or in the air.

Blessed is this hope of a coming Lord, coming for those who are His.

Blessed because it will lift the Church into the place of associated power and rulership with Christ over the world.

For two thousand years the Church has tried to rule the world.

The Roman Church tried it, became apostate and failed, became political and unspiritual, attempted to win by stake, by blood, and torture, and not by grace and truth; by blood and torture till scarlet became the fitting color her priesthood wears.

The world rose up, broke the shackles and for a while refused to hear her speak.

Then the Protestant Church dreamed that by the Gospel it could lay hold of the world and bring it in due submission to its will. It failed. Then it entered into partnership with civilization, education, and human culture. It modified its ancient theology, it cut out some pages from the Bible, got rid of miracles, repudiated full inspiration and turning itself into a system of ethical culture and competitive morality has hoped to win the world by coming down to the level of its materialistic naturalism.

And here it has utterly, derisively and deservedly failed.

Neither owned of God nor much respected by the world it is fast traveling to that Laodicean threshold where the Son of God has threatened to *spew it out of His mouth*.

The Church while down here cannot rule the world.

It is incapable of ruling the world, not only because Christ the living Head is still a rejected King and exile from His covenant throne, but because between us and the line of light which breaks like whitened surf of wide sea splendor against the black and sunless void surrounding this earth, there is a hierarchy of evil spirits; so that the apostle has said, “For we wrestle not against flesh and blood,” (Eph. 6:12) as did the Israelites when they sought to gain possession of the Promised Land, but with wicked spirits in the atmospheric heavens. These spirits dwelling in that zone of darkness are called “*Kosmokrátoras Tous Skótous Toútou*.” “The world rulers of (or from) this darkness.” They are under the leadership of him whom our Lord calls, “the prince of this world,” (See John 12:31; 14:30; 16:11) and who is none other than “. . . that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan,” (Rev. 12:9; See also 20:2). Under him and governed by his subtle wisdom they stand behind the thrones of kings, of emperors and the chairs of presidents, dictate the policy of cabinets, inspire confusion, complication and war among the nations. The Apostle John in vision sees three of them going forth to gather the nations to that final worldwide war rendezvous at Armageddon. (See Rev. 16:13-16)

No matter what attitude the Church may take, no matter how spiritually it may live, this is an age when Satanic power will send abroad those forces which will array themselves now in open wickedness and anon as angels of light against divine rule and Heaven’s ways of righteousness.

The Church is not here to rule the world but to protest against it. It bears the same relation to the world today as did the ministry of Noah. We are told that he “. . . being warned of God of things not seen as yet, moved with fear, prepared an ark to the saving of his house; *by the which he condemned the world*,” (Heb. 11:7).

The ark was a warning of coming judgment from the hand of God, a protest against sin and unbelief; and by so much as it stood for the saving of men out of the world, condemned the world.

Such is the responsibility and should be the attitude and function of the Church.

The Church is here to save men out of the world; by so much it is a protest against it as a system, condemns it and is a witness, God has ordained it shall pass away.

For the Church to assume the place of rulership while the Lord is an exile from His own particular throne would be open treason to Him. It would be as much treason as though a queen should attempt to rule while her husband was “despised and rejected” as king (See Isa. 53:3, as our LORD). Such an attempt would be proof that she had not only parted company from himself, but had rejected his principles.

A church in the place of world pomp, power, and glory would be proof irresistible that she had forgotten the faith of Him whose name she wears; had forgotten that He walked this earth a pilgrim and a stranger, a faithful witness of coming judgment; and that it was He who has said:

“But as the days of Noe were, so shall also the coming of the Son of man be.” (Matt. 24:37)

No! this is not the hour of Church rulership.

With keen and spirit-inspired arraignment the apostle rebukes the Church at Corinth because they thought the hour of world rulership had come. He says:

“Now ye are full, now ye are rich, *ye have reigned as kings* without us: and *I would to God ye did reign*, that we also might reign with you.” (I Cor. 4:8)

Then he goes on to show that so far from reigning and ruling in the world he and the apostles were suffering from the evil and persecution of the world. He says:

“For I think that God hath set forth us the apostles last, as it were appointed to death: for we are made a spectacle unto the world, and to angels, and to men.

“We are fools for Christ’s sake, but ye are wise in Christ; we are weak, but ye are strong; ye are honourable, but we are despised.

“Even unto this present hour we both hunger, and thirst, and are naked, and are buffeted, and have no certain dwellingplace;

“And labour, working with our own hands: being reviled, we bless; being persecuted, we suffer it:

“Being defamed, we intreat: we are made as *the filth of the world*, and are *the offscouring* of all things unto this day.” (I Cor. 4:9-13)

Surely there is no royal rulership in this; nor can there be till the Lord comes. The rulership of the Church is *coincident with the Coming of the Lord*.

When He comes to reign, when He appears in glory as King of kings, then as a Queen the Church will appear with Him and reign over the world in glory; wherefore it is written:

“If we suffer, we shall also reign with him:” (II Tim. 2:12).

Not till after the Church is taken to Heaven does she take up the triumphant song of anticipated rulership.

In the *fifth chapter* of the *Revelation* where the Church is seen translated to Heaven and dwelling there under the figure of the twenty-four elders, and at the moment when the Lord takes the title deeds to the kingdom and is about to break the seals and send down the judgment which precedes His appearing, the Church breaks forth into this exultant announcement, this new, new song of redemption and rule:

“And they sung a new song, saying! Thou (the once slain Lamb, the risen Lord) art worthy to take the book, and to open the seals thereof: for thou wast slain, and hast redeemed us to God *by thy blood* out of every kindred, and tongue, and people, and nation;

“And hast made us unto our God *kings and priests*: and we *shall* reign on (over) the earth.” (Rev. 5:9,10)

When He shall appear to take to Himself His great power and reign, the Church shall be enthroned in light. Then shall she rule with Him. Where now the world walks in the spiritual darkness of this hierarchy of evil, then will it walk in the light of the exalted and glorified Church of Christ, the Church of the first born ones. (See Heb. 12:23)

All this is consequent upon the Coming of the Lord into the air to take the Church up to Himself in the Holy City.

Blessed, indeed, is this hope set before us, because the result of it will be the manifestation and complete revealing of our Lord Jesus Christ as *our great God and Saviour*.

We shall see Him as—*Our great God*.

When I was a stranger to Him; when I knew Him not and was filled with questions I could not answer and none could answer for me; when there was no rest and peace; when the universe seemed a huge mistake or a fearful and brutal thing crushing me at every turn wherever I lifted and posed an investigating thought, I said within myself had I the fashioning of a God, He should be human, with a human heart and human understanding, with capacity to enter into my sorrows, my perplexities and cares, and, at the same time a God who should have all power to match and fulfill the promises He should make to me.

I did not know then, I did not understand, this was, indeed, the very God who had entered the earth and died for men, the God who now sits on yonder throne in glorified and *infinite humanity*.

We shall see Him with His perfect, immortal humanity, the center of the effulgent deity that is His and clothes Him, very God of very God, real man, true and everlasting God and everlasting man.

Everlasting God, our human and divine Saviour!

The Saviour who gave Himself to die for us.

Paul will kneel at His feet and cry:

“Thou lovedst me and gavest thyself for me.” (See Gal. 2:20)

And I shall say that, and ten thousand times ten thousand and thousands of thousands shall say that and fling their tribute of praise and adoration before Him as when ingots of gold are flung into the treasury of a king.

Not only this, but the Church, as a Church, shall take part in the manifestation of His glory; as it is written:

“When Christ, who is our life, shall appear, then shall ye also appear *with him* in glory.” (Col. 3:4)

When He appears in glory, He will appear *from* Heaven.

When the Church appears with Him in glory, she also, must appear *from* Heaven.

Before the Church can appear *from* Heaven she must be *caught up into* Heaven.

She is caught up to meet the Lord when He descends into the air; as it is written:

“Then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them (the risen, Christian dead) in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord.” (I Thess. 4:17)

This being caught up to meet the Lord in the air is declared by the Holy Spirit officially, to be:

“... OUR GATHERING TOGETHER UNTO HIM.” (II Thess. 2:1)

Our gathering together to meet Him in the air in the very nature of the case takes place before we can appear with Him in glory.

The Coming of Christ into the air to gather the Church to Himself previous to His appearing in glory is, strictly speaking, the actual, preëminent, *blessed hope of the Church*. The *appearing* in glory is made a *conjunctive part* of it and the statement of the text reads: “Looking for that blessed hope, *and* the glorious appearing. . .” (Titus 2:13), *because* the glorious appearing (appearing of the glory) is included in and (although a *distinct stage* of it) is a *resultant* part of the Blessed Hope.

It is because of this blessed (happy) fact that Christ is coming *first for* the Church that we shall *appear with* Him in the glory.

The glory! Who can describe it?

What words, or forms, or symbols can reveal it?

Take suns and systems, take the twelve thousand millions of suns (suns alone) that are spread within the radii of the telescope; take all the suns and their circling and dependent systems, all the universe, and focus them into one colorful fusion of astral splendor; turn all the clouds into shekinal chariots; gather all the unnumbered and innumerable angels of the unnumbered worlds in our Father's house and concentrate the coruscation of their blinding beauty, the illumination of their kingly faces; take all the songs that have been sung by them over every

repentant soul on earth; let the earth lift up its voice from all its hills and vales; let the sea bid “the white priesthood” of its waves to kneel on every shore and chant in foam written hallelujahs; let all the wide, measureless spaces, the endless, infinite extensions sound the music of their ever rolling spheres in such inwrought and perfect unison that earth and the inhabitants thereof shall hear the farthest and the faintest accent; then let the Son of God come forth in all His personal and essential glory now for the first time fully revealed, until sun and moon and stars shall pale and all beauty fade and there remain but one vision of visions to fill earth and Heaven: till His face and His alone be seen, and His voice be heard as the sound of many waters, mightier than all the sounding waters of all the seven seas when lifted and flung with crashing, tempestuous thunders on every rock-bound shore; then let the Church, the saints of all the ages be seen with Him, reflecting Him as the moon reflects the sun, but when the light of the moon shall be as the light of the sun, and the light of the sun is seven-fold as the light of seven days; and then when all has been done and all words in all the best speech of man have been used to describe it, the very words themselves shall break and be as dust, and every phrase shall be as a beggar pleading for better garmenting and richer form to hide his nakedness; because no word can describe, no tongue can speak the glory of that wondrous hour when Jesus and His blood redeemed, spirit regenerated, and exalted Church shall come forth to reign.

This, and all the glories that are to follow are the consequence of the Blessed Hope.

But, not only does grace set the hope before us, it teaches us the *attitude* to take as Christians now, in respect to that hope.

It teaches us to be “expecting,” to be ready and waiting in our day as though, *at any moment*, the Lord might come.

Human wisdom does not teach that.

Human wisdom and human conceit will give us *calendars* and *dates* and *times*, bidding us be busy with *them* and not with *Him*.

But we are to be “expecting” the Lord. That is the meaning of the word, “looking.”

What utter betrayal of language, what sheer and shameful accusation it brings against the apostle, nay, against the Holy Ghost Himself who inspired the apostle, to say “expecting” this hope means we are to be looking for signs, for predicted events, studying the map, figuring out times and seasons, putting up tribulations and wars, even the thickness of a shadow between ourselves and the Coming of the Lord.

If “expecting” the blessed hope does not mean the Lord may come to make good that hope while we are expecting, then has the apostle deceived us wilfully, cruelly, brutally, or himself has been helplessly deceived and the whole scheme and concept of the Blessed Hope falls to the ground as a worthless delusion and contemptible snare.

If the word, “looking,” “expecting,” means *anything* within the range and realm of human intelligence and decent, undeniable sincerity, it means—IMMANENCY.

It means, expecting the *Lord Himself* as the Hope which makes hoping for Him—blessed.

It means logically and legitimately living from day to day in the confidence and the hope He might come any day.

Grace teaches us to rise above every hindrance, every object that may be thrust in the way.

I knew a wife who waited for the coming of her husband, and when trains failed to bring him and time passed and wise people shook their heads and said it was no longer worth while to wait, she continued to wait and expect. He had bidden her to watch for his return any day. Love and hope and yearning desire for him taught her to wait and expect. And at last, in spite of all the clear deductions against his *any day* coming, he came at last and her expectation was fulfilled; not only fulfilled, but all the while she waited, and hoped and yearned and loved, there had deepened in her heart her sense of all he was to her, her need of him; so that, in the hour of fulfillment she was able to pour forth the long-pent-up wealth and worth of her waiting and expectant love.

Grace teaches us to hold that attitude toward the Blessed Hope.

It teaches us to hold it as—a *hope*, not merely as a *doctrine*.

It *is* doctrine and *is true* whether you hold it or reject it; but grace will teach you to hold it as a hope; to hold it as a hope deep down in your very soul, hoping every day that in that day it may be realized for you.

He who treats it simply as a *doctrine*, soon loses it as a *hope*, and presently will be occupied in finding reasons why it will not come in his day, or must be delayed many days.

Listen to the teachers who deny it as an any day possibility or hope and you will find the thought of the Coming of the Lord does not affect or shape their daily lives.

They are simply *doctrinaires*, not those who mould and fashion their lives by daily hope.

But mark, I pray you, the benefit of this hope to those who hold it as such.

It is as an helmet; so it is written:

“But let us, who are of the day (Christians, saved people), be sober, putting on the breastplate of faith and love; and for an helmet, the hope of salvation.” (I Thess. 5:8)

What is the salvation for which as Christians, as saved people, we are to hope?

Surely, after having just written to the Thessalonians that they were “children of light” (See I Thess. 5:5) and therefore saved (as he says corroboratively, including himself with them, “For God hath *not appointed* us to wrath, but to obtain salvation by our Lord Jesus Christ,”) (I Thess. 5:9) in speaking of the “*hope*” of salvation the apostle could not have intended to raise any question of uncertainty in respect to their *present* salvation.

What then does he mean by “hope of salvation?”

The answer is to be found in his epistle to the Romans. He says:

“... now is our salvation nearer than when we believed.

“The night is far spent, *the day is at hand*.” (Rom. 13:11,12).

He is speaking of the salvation which will come in the *Day of Christ*; and as the day of Christ begins with the Coming of Christ for His Church, then the salvation hoped for is that which will take place at the Coming of Christ.

That salvation is not in respect to the soul, but—*the body*.

Salvation is threefold: *for* us, *in* us and *upon* us.

For us—on the cross.

In us—by regeneration.

Upon us—by the resurrection of the bodies of the Christian dead, and the transfiguration of the bodies of the Christian living.

This *salvation* of the body unto immortality is accomplished at the Coming of the Lord *for* His Church; and as the Coming of the Lord is—the blessed *hope* of the Church, then the Coming of the Lord to deliver, immortalize and save the bodies of those who form the Church is the salvation the apostle bids us to hope for, and which he declares is as an helmet.

You know the Greek and Roman helmet!

With that great high ridge running through the center of the casque the blow of sword or spear fell slanting and glanced away an inefficient, harmless stroke.

Just so I have this blessed hope as though there were an helmet on my head.

All sorts of blows come, questions and problems that cannot be solved and ever return, demanding and insisting on solution: the question of sin, of culture, of education, of life and death, of the being and character of God in the face of human sin, suffering and woe; a thousand askings that find no answer. Questions, which, if persisted in would crush the brain, break the heart and leave you mad with cursing, agony, and despair; but all these questions and their insidious poison strokes fall harmlessly on my head; for, at once, I answer, every question, every problem, every difficulty in life will be settled in the twinkling of an eye by the *Coming of the Lord*.

What hope have I when I look out upon all the mystery, misery, sorrow, anguish, shame, and wrong, and all the helplessness of man to meet and settle things?

You ask that?

When I see the costly breakdown and failure of government in the hand of man; when I see the rending and tearing to pieces of the banner of civilization and learn that culture is a thin veneer that for a moment hides the brute beast in human kind—what hope have I?

What hope have I when I see a world today soaked in blood and tears, and ghastly horror keeping vigil at the blackened hearthstones of one time happy homes?

What hope have I, you ask, in the midst of all this?

I answer:

THE COMING OF OUR LORD JESUS CHRIST.

That is my hope, that is the one thing that will solve the problems and bring eternal rest for a tumult tossed and troubled world.

That is my hope and this hope the Holy Spirit writes is—*blessed*.

It is an helmet which saves my head, my brain, my heart from all the questioning, maddening blows, keeps me sound and sane, standing steadfast and with peace, even where conflicts rage.

Mark the benefit of holding this Coming of the Lord as an imminent fact and hope:

It is written:

“And every man that hath this hope in him purifieth himself, *even as he is pure.*” (1 John 3:3)

You know if you found yourself in the presence of some one very courteous, very refined, of finished manners and discovered you were not so well equipped and furnished, when you retired to the privacy of your own home you would take yourself to strict account and determine when next you met you would seek to stand on equal plane. You would make an effort in that direction.

Hold this Coming of the Lord as an actual hope within your soul. Say within your inmost self you wish He would come; fall on your knees and pray; with the Spirit and the Bride say, “Come,” lift up the *closing prayer*, the *last recorded prayer of Holy Scripture*: “. . . Even so, come, Lord Jesus;” (Rev. 22:20); do this and mean it sincerely, and sooner or later you will find that almost unconsciously and involuntarily you are seeking to purify yourself from evil thought and impulse, making whole-souled and earnest endeavor to be clean, to be true within, to live upon the Christly plane.

You put on your best garments for an expected guest.

Expect Christ and you will clothe yourself with holiness, with purity and truth.

Hold this Coming of the Lord as an actual hope and it will inspire you to redoubled service in His name.

If you wish Him to come, if you believe He might come at any time, you would not be content that He should find you doing nothing in His name. If you were an employee and wasted your employer’s paid for time; if he came and found you using that time for yourself alone you would be discharged and put to shame. To be doing nothing when the Lord comes, using the time He paid for with His blood for yourself and not for Him, you would be filled with the sense of shame.

Hold this Coming as a hope, believe it really as the Word of God, as the Son of God Himself declares it to be—immanent, and you will be impelled to do all your hands find to do and with all your might.

This blessed hope is an incentive to work, to serve the Lord and a quickening impulse to seek and save the souls of men; in short to live, to make tremendous effort to live and manifest the life of Christ.

Where were you last night, you who profess to be a follower of Christ?

Were you at the theatre, the dance, the card party; were you side by side with those who were not Christians and who, from your conversation did not know or even imagine you were Christians?

What if the Lord should come tomorrow? Who can measure the horror of awakening that would be yours to see these very friends and pleasure companions shut out to the endless woe and you saved in spite of all your treasonable inconsistency because the Lord kept faith with the covenant of the blood you once had claimed?

But—listen—listen well—not all who profess, not all who say Lord, Lord, are saved. There are things which accompany salvation and those who are really saved have more or less of those accompanying things. It might be, after all, in spite of your profession your outbreking inconsistency would prove that you were a mere professor and not an actual possessor; that if the Lord should come and you had not repented and changed your way you would be left behind with your godless company to judgment and to woe.

O, if you are true, if you are genuine, if you really wish the Lord to come, if you believe the time is short, it will

move you to go forth, speak the Word in season and lead the unsaved, the thoughtless and the lost to a seeking Saviour's feet.

And now listen to me!

One of the joys I anticipate in that hour when I shall be caught up to meet the Lord is the joy of meeting those who have heard me preach, who have believed the Word and have been made one with a living Christ.

In the long years of my ministry thousands have thronged before me. What joy if I shall meet them and have them tell me that some simple word I uttered in the Master's name helped to turn their faces to the God I serve.

But—there is sometimes a horror of blackness and great darkness comes over my soul as I look, as I do tonight, at this great throng and ask myself the question—“Will all these meet me at the throne of peace and light inside the upper city's gates? or when I shall sit in associated judgment with the saints of God in that last and awful judgment hour at the Great White Throne, will I see some such as you who have heard me preach? shall I see you stand with downcast eyes and speechless lips, and shall I hear above you sound the awful word—“*Depart?*”

O, it is that I cannot bear to think upon and I plead with you here and now to arouse before too late.

If Christ the Lord came tonight you would be left out to certain woe; for you there would be, indeed, no gleam of hope, only one long midnight of starless despair.

Turn then to him who bids you come, He who in rare and gracious words has said: “. . . him that cometh to me I will in no wise cast out.” (John 6:37); who no matter what you may have been or done will never say you *nay*.

Turn and claim the shelter of the blood and with those of us who hold the Blessed Hope, and hold it as a hope, rise to meet Him when He comes and be with Him and the happy company of the gathered saints forever more.

Let grace then save you now, let grace teach you how to live and let grace lead you day by day to be “*Looking for that blessed hope, and the glorious appearing of the great God and our Saviour Jesus Christ;*” (Titus 2:13).

VII.
THE GREAT SEPARATION

The Great Separation

MY theme tonight is:

“The Great separation that will take place when our Lord Jesus Christ comes for His Church.”

My texts are three in number:

(Matt. 7:21-23; Luke 13:25; Matt. 13:47,48.)

“Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven.

“Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderful works?

“And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity.” (Matt. 7:21-23)

“When once the master of the house is risen up, and hath shut to the door, and ye begin to stand without, and to knock at the door, saying, Lord, Lord, open unto us; and he shall answer and say unto you, I know you not whence ye are:” (Luke 13:25).

“Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto a net, that was cast into the sea, and gathered of every kind:

“Which, when it was full, they drew to shore, and sat down, and gathered the good into vessels, but cast the bad away.” (Matt. 13:47,48)

Out of these texts I present to you four propositions:

1. In this age God is calling upon, and giving an opportunity to all to profess faith in the name of His Son.
2. There is a profession of Christ which gives all the evidences of being genuine and acceptable to God.
3. There is a profession which gives no evidence of being genuine.
4. A great separation will take place when our Lord Jesus Christ comes down into the air to receive His Church unto Himself.

1. In this age God is calling upon and giving opportunity to all to profess faith in the name of His Son.

The history of the world has been divided of God into distinct ages or epochs, each with its definite beginning and ending.

God the Father set apart and ordained these ages by the pre-incarnate action of His son; as it is written: “. . . by whom also he made the worlds;” (Heb. 1:2).

“Worlds” here signify and could be rendered, “ages.”

The word “made” has the sense of “arranged.”

By and through His Son, therefore, God the Father planned the successive ages of His dealing with man. In other words, the history of man is not an accident. It lies within the infinite purpose of God and moves on as He intended

from age to age, and will steadily and surely move to the consummation of the age of the ages.

These ages are seven in number and in each God acts in ways distinct and peculiar to that age.

The *first* begins with the creation of man and ends with his fall and expulsion from Eden.

It is the Edenic age, or age of Innocency.

In it God deals with man as a creature without antecedent or predisposition, and as innocent.

He deals with him on the basis of the tree of the *knowledge* of good and evil; the fruit of which he is forbidden to eat.

The issue is—Obedience to God.

If he will obey the Word and command of God he shall have eternal life, an immortal body, he shall be enthroned of God, His visibility and incarnation.

It is the forecast, the promise and the outline of *The Incarnation*. It is the outreach of the living *God to become God manifest in the flesh*.

If the man disobey he shall die. He shall be separated from God morally and intellectually. He himself, finally, shall be lost forever.

The Devil tempts. He raises a doubt concerning the truth of God's Word. He suggests that man, if he eat will not die. He shall be as God. They shall, like God, create beings in their own image. They shall be independent of God. The woman yields, the man partakes, death begins and they go forth from the sunset side of Eden to fill the world with sin and sorrow and lie down at last in the grave that waits for them.

The *second* age begins with the birth of Cain and ends with the flood.

It is the Antediluvian Age, or the Age of Conscience.

Adam begets a son in his own image, but it is the image of a fallen man.

The woman was mistaken in the birth of Cain. She thought he was the promised seed, the coming deliverer.

She gave birth to Abel, her second son.

The first was a tiller of the earth. The second a keeper of sheep.

God takes off all law. He shuts man up to conscience. (Conscience is not the gift of God. It is not His endowment. It is the logical consequence of the fall of man and comes in thereby. It is the self accusation of sin. It is the shadow of God's judgment throne on the soul.)

Cain kills his brother.

God sets aside the penalty for murder.

The evil, the sin and lawlessness now inherent in man become so great God is forced to drown the whole world, all but Noah and his family, who are saved in and by an ark ordained of God.

The *third* age begins with the going forth of Noah and his family from the ark and ends with the death of Joseph in Egypt.

It is the Patriarchal age—from Pater, father, and Archon, ruler. The age of the father rulers.

God tests man in the relation of the family.

He sets up government in and for the family and rulership by the father.

He now legislates the death penalty for murder, "Whoso sheddeth man's blood, by man shall his blood be shed:" (Gen. 9:6).

Justice and righteousness are to be administered in the earth.

Ordained government in the hand of man is given the right to take life, to magnify law, justice and righteousness.

Government is based on *atonement by blood—life for a life*. The individual patriarchs stand for distinct and individual truth.

Noah represents *grace* from God. "But Noah," it is written, "found *grace* in the eyes of the Lord." (Gen. 6:8)

Abraham is the fruit of grace—the place and exercise of *faith*.

Isaac is the fruit of faith, and that is—*Sonship*.

Jacob is the fruit of sonship—that is *service* (faith is shown by works).

Joseph is the fruit of service—that is, first, *suffering*, and then, *glory*.

The *fourth* age begins with the going of the children of Israel out of Egypt and ends with the coming of John the Baptist; as it is written: “The law and the prophets were until John: ” (Luke 16:16).

It is the Mosaic age, or the age of the law.

The people of Israel are chosen of God as His peculiar people, the one and only divine nation. They are brought nigh on the ground of blood. By blood they are redeemed from the sentence against the first-born. They are brought out of Egypt by the hand of power. They are set on their course to the promised land.

At Sinai they turn away from the unconditional covenant of Abraham which guaranteed them the land. They put themselves under the covenant of the law.

In Israel, therefore, God is testing man nationally, in responsibility to government, and under bond to law.

The *fifth* age begins with the baptism of our Lord by John in Jordan and ends at the cross.

It is the Messianic age, or the age of God made visible and incarnate.

God tests the character of the natural man by the supernatural character of His Son.

Man proves himself to have the Cain spirit of murder. He commits *deicide* by slaying God in the person of His human as well as Divine Son.

The *seventh* age will begin with the *coming of Christ* and *all* His saints from heaven to set up the kingdom of heaven, and will end with the Great White Throne, the second resurrection and the second death.

This is the Millennial age, or the age of the kingdom. In it God tests man with a perfect government in the hand of a perfect and righteous King.

He looses Satan, who had been bound during the thousand years, that he may reveal the unregenerate in the kingdom. They rebel against God and are destroyed by fire from heaven.

The Christless dead of all ages are judged at the White Throne. The death sentence pronounced in Eden finds its consummation.

The *eighth* and final age begins with the new heavens and the new earth and—*never ends*.

This is the eternal state, or the age of the endless years and the accomplished purpose of God in man.

The earth is regenerated, created anew out of the womb of fire, born into a new orbit under new and life-filled heavens, and becomes the dwelling place of man and incarnate God.

Man is fully linked to Godhead.

He is the multiplied and eternal incarnation of God.

The fulness of the Godhead bodily is manifested in Christ. With Christ dwelling upon it the earth becomes the moral, governmental and spiritual center of the universe. Of the increase of the Kingdom of God and Christ, and man in God and Christ there shall be no end.

The sixth age is the age in which we now live.

It began *secretly* when Christ rose from the dead, breathed on His disciples and gave them the Holy Ghost.

It began *publicly* on the day of Pentecost when the ascended Christ endued the Church with the power of the Holy Ghost. It will end *secretly* (and may end at any moment) by the coming of Christ into the air FOR His Church.

It will end *publicly* when the translated Church shall come WITH Christ to begin the kingdom.

This age differs from all which preceded it.

It differs from those which shall follow it.

In this age God is not calling upon men to believe in His existence as a personal God.

There is no need that He should do so.

In yonder nightly sky His name is written in each shining star. Each star is but a letter in the syllabication of His name. Each mountain peak of earth, each river slipping to the sea, the sea thundering on the shore, each blade of grass and growing, fruited tree, the succession of day and night, the sequence of the seasons, everywhere the adaptation of means to an end, everywhere the operation revealing intent, purpose, thought, and back of the thought the unfailing *Thinker*, the old earth flying on its course about the sun and returning whence it came to start afresh, law, order, authority, power, all proclaim the living, the uncaused, the eternal, self-existent, self-sufficient and ever efficient God.

There is no need to invite men to believe in a supreme, personal being. Only a fool in his heart (never in the brain) can say there is no God. The apostle Paul arraigns the beautiful and corrupt civilization of his day and declares its idolatry, its paganism, without excuse because the might, the majesty and the power of God are seen in the work and manifestation of an all-surrounding creation.

God is not calling on men to believe in the Holy Spirit.

There is no need that He should.

The operation and work of the Holy Spirit is manifested every day in contrast to the spirit of lawlessness, wickedness, evil and the mad riot of sin which would win its way were it not for the hindering and pervading presence of this same Holy Spirit.

God is not dealing with men today on the issue of sin.

He gave His estimate of man as a sinner long ago, as a sinner by nature and by transgression.

He enforced His estimate by the flood which swept away all but the chosen and selected eight.

He emphasized and culminated that judgment in the cross. On the cross He judged the natural man and his world.

The cry of agony from the divine victim, "My God, My God, why hast Thou forsaken Me?" tells the doom which would now fall upon the world did not the cross hold back the individual judgment and permit men to live under the grace of a suspended sentence.

Did God deal with man on the issue of sin but for a single day, all would be driven from His presence and the glory of His power. The issue now is not *man's sin*—but, *God's love*.

The great, the all-important, the one supreme question is not the *sin question* at all, but—the *Son question*.

"WHAT THINK YE OF CHRIST?" (See Matt. 22:42)

That is the question the Son Himself asked. That is the question God the Father is asking.

"What think ye of My Son?"

He is sending the Church out to ask that question.

That is why the Church has been created, and this is its function and mission, to set the issue squarely up to every soul and ask insistently, probingly, "What think ye of Christ? Whose Son is He?"

The Church is commanded in this age (and this age has been marked out and set apart that the Church might fulfill the command); the Church is commanded to climb the mountains, cross the plains, search the valleys, sail the seas, tread the wilderness, enter villages, towns and cities, and ask of every creature in all the wide world what each one thinks of Christ.

By and through the Church and the Gospel committed to its charge God is calling on men to believe in His Son, to believe on Him at once—without delay.

He is not asking men to believe in His Son as a mere man.

He *was* a real man.

He began His human life as a babe. He lay upon a woman's breast with a babe's need and a babe's weakness. He grew in strength of body, in stature, in knowledge and favor with men.

He worked and toiled as a man. He wrought as a carpenter. He earned His bread in the sweat of His brow.

He went forth at thirty years of age to preach the kingdom of heaven. He was led by the Spirit. He surrendered to the Spirit. He had all the experiences of men. He was tempted. He was sorely tried. He hungered. He thirsted. He

grew tired and weary. He endured poverty. The foxes had holes, the birds had nests. There were times when He knew not where to lay His head. (See Matt. 8:20; Luke 9:58)

He was sensitive. When they brought Him the woman taken in sin, He bent down to hide the blush upon His virgin cheek and wrote with His fingers in the sand the worthlessness because of the hypocrisy of their charge.

He was full of sympathy. He wept at Lazarus' grave. He was moved with compassion for the troubled and the heavy laden. He was so keenly sensitive that when they came to arrest Him, He protested, not at the arrest, but at the manner of it. He said He had openly taught in their synagogue. He had done nothing in secret. Why then should they come out against Him with lanterns and staves, as though they had come out against a thief?

He drank deeply of the cup of sorrow. He said, "...My soul is exceeding sorrowful unto death:" (Mark 14:34).

He died as other men die. He was wrapped in a shroud and laid in the grave as others are laid.

He was a real man.

The record is plain enough.

But God is not sending the Church out specifically and supremely to demonstrate that, to ask men to believe that.

He is not calling on men to believe in Him merely as a *good* man.

He *was* all that!

He was much more than good.

He was sinless.

He was a *sinless man*.

He stands out in contrast to natural men as a white, polished marble shaft might rise up out of the midst of a black, tossing midnight sea; as a white rose in the midst of scarlet poppies; as a song in the heart of discord; as a blue space of quiet sky in the midst of encircling, storm-swept clouds; as a smile of love in contrast to a face of hate. He challenged those who knew Him best, who came in contact with Him every day, who knew all His goings out and coming in, what He was in private and what He was before the crowds that followed Him, to convict Him if they could of a single sin, a wilful or an accidental wrong. None took up the challenge then. Across all the shame, the falsehood, the conspiracy and the treasons wrought in twenty centuries none has taken it up since.

His sinlessness, His divine, His miraculous holiness is so self-evident, so unimpeachable, so far above assault that it needs no exhortation to believe it.

God is not calling on men to follow the earthly *example* of His Son, to copy it in order that they may be saved.

Take the best man you know. The man against whom his most intimate friends can find not the slightest charge; who stands with all shadows beneath his feet; who is so perfect that his praise is in every mouth, and place that man alongside the Christ of God and he shall be as unclean, unwholesome and repellent as the black stream of thick and turgid slime that runs its course in the foulest filled and most repulsive ditch. All our righteousness in His sight are as filthy, sickening, germ-laden rags.

Take him who has followed Christ, one who has followed Him more nearly and clearly than any other on the earth, and whose motives have been sane and pure and always loyal, and he shall seem as near to actually following and being like Christ as the crawling worm is to the heaven-flying meteor.

Put the attainment of the loftiest human character on earth by His side and it reaches to His moral and spiritual elevation no nearer than the grain of sand at the bottom of the Alps is to their snow-clad heights.

God is not calling on men to match themselves with Christ or make Him the merely perfect human model for their natural lives.

He is calling on men to believe in His Son, not as He walked the earth but—As HE DIED ON THE CROSS.

That cross was set up in the counsels of Godhead before ever the earth or the heavens were formed.

Our Lord Jesus Christ came into the world that He might go to that cross.

The cross was the *objective* of His *birth*.

He was *born to die* on the cross.

The artist who pictured Him standing in the carpenter shop at Nazareth, in the light of the setting sun with His hands outstretched until the shadow fell on the opposite wall in the form of a cross, depicted with true perception the purpose of His life and the daily deepening shadow of the approaching fact.

Continually He told His disciples He was going up to Jerusalem to be crucified.

He set His face steadfastly thither.

He went to that cross as straight as the arrow from the bow, as a beam of light from the sun.

God is calling men to believe in His Son, His *Crucified* Son.

This was the theme of the Apostle Paul.

Standing there in Corinth, surrounded by Greek culture, himself a scholar, standing where his eye could take in the scenes of classic inspiration, and where everything might tempt him to parade his learning, his rhetoric and scholastic skill, in simple and downright terms he said:

“For I determined not to know any thing among you, save Jesus Christ, and him *crucified*.” (1 Cor. 2:2)

Through the Church God is calling men to believe in—

CHRIST ON THE CROSS.

He is not telling the Church to go preach the earthly life of Christ at all.

It is amazing that men, that accredited preachers with an open Bible, should think so. Turn over the sermons of the apostles, read their letters to the churches; they are not taken up with how He lived and what He did on earth. No! they are occupied with what He did so tremendously and triumphantly on the cross. They are possessed, held with amazement as well as awe and delight and overflowing joy as they contemplate Him on that cross, and pour out the fullness of their souls as they seek to speak and write about it.

God is calling men to believe in Christ on that cross as a sacrifice for sin, as the antitype and fulfillment of all the sacrifices and offerings that had gone before, as the true burnt offering, peace offering, sin and trespass offering.

He is calling on men to believe in the empty grave, the light of immortality that flashes forth in the resurrection of His Son; to offer Him as the sacrifice provided by infinite love and measureless grace; to claim Him as personal substitute; to own Him as Lord, as God, as Saviour and only Redeemer.

This is the invitation.

This is the function of the Church.

And this is the age in which to fulfill the function, to give broadcast the invitation.

But it is more than an invitation.

It is a law; as much a law as the law of Sinai.

You are *commanded* to believe on our Lord Jesus Christ.

It is an invitation that holds within it all the energy of a command. It demands obedience, the obedience of faith; as it is written:

“ . . . the preaching of Jesus Christ, according to the revelation of the mystery, which was kept secret since the world began, but now is made manifest, and by the scriptures of the prophets, *according to the commandment of the everlasting God, made known to all nations for the obedience of faith:*” (Rom. 16:25,26).

It is certainly an invitation, a gracious invitation.

It is, beyond all doubt, a commandment, an insistent and absolute commandment.

You have no choice about it.

It is not open to discussion.

The Gospel does not present a theme for debate.

It is a law legislated in agony and written in blood.

The Christian minister as an ambassador of Christ is authorized to utter it as such and present it as God's ultimatum to the nations.

If you accept and believe it, the results are immediate.

The moment you believe you are counted of God as obedient. You may have been the worst of sinners and the chiefest of rebels against His way and will; but, so soon as you believe you are reported at the throne of God, no longer a guilty, death-doomed rebel, but an obedient and accepted son, your sins all forgiven; though they may have been as scarlet they are made whiter than snow. You are justified, accepted as righteous before God; you are made a partaker of the divine nature; you are indwelt by the Holy Ghost and through Him linked up to the body of a risen and glorified Christ, made heir with Him, coheir throughout eternal ages—*you are saved*.

If you do not believe the results are just as marked.

You have transgressed God's law.

The transgression of the law is sin.

You are a sinner before God.

You may be here tonight the whitest man who ever lived upon the earth. You may have no yesterdays to haunt you, no Nemesis coming with wool-shod feet, with hammer and nail, swiftly behind you with sudden blow to smite your throbbing temple. You may have no fears of tomorrow. Your character may be such that men salute you as you pass and you yourself so confident in your own integrity you could look unwinkingly in the eyes of God. You may be all that and yet, if here and now I ask you to believe and accept our Lord Jesus Christ as your only Saviour, your Lord and God; if you respond to me and say no, tell me you have no need of Him, that you are ready and willing to stand on the merit of your own character, then I tell you, if never a sinner before, *you are a sinner now*.

And not only that! in God's sight *you are the worst of sinners*. You have committed sin greater than any other written in the calendar of many. Make no mistake! the sins that are catalogued and read and known of men will have to be answered for. All sin of every description unpardoned will be punished; but great as the worst of other sins may be, your sin is greater than all others combined.

I cannot make you believe it.

No archangel from heaven could make you believe it. The Holy Ghost alone can do it.

He alone can convict man of that sin of all sins, the sin supreme,—the sin of refusing to believe on the Lord Jesus Christ and own Him as Saviour through His redeeming blood.

That is why the Holy Spirit personally is down here in this age. Our Lord said when the Spirit whom He calls the Comforter should come He would convict the world of sin, of righteousness and judgment to come. (See John 16:8)

And note the words:

"Of sin, BECAUSE THEY BELIEVE NOT ON ME." (John 16:9)

The Holy Ghost did not come into the world to convict men of the sins of lust, of lying, cheating, theft, robbery, drunkenness, profanity, murder. The laws of the state will do that. The accusing remorse of a man's conscience will do that.

That is not the work of the Holy Ghost.

He came into the world to convict men of but ONE SIN, the sin of sins, the sin of disbelieving in and rejecting Christ, the crucified and risen Son of God.

I cannot convict you of this sin; but I can tell you why it is the greatest of all sins.

What would you say of the man condemned to die for whom his fellow citizens felt such compassion that they signed a protest and sent out a plea to the governor of the state to pardon him, to let him even go free? What would you say of that man who when the pardon came, signed and sealed with the great seal of the state, when it was handed to him, took it, spat upon it, then flung it in the face of the pardon bearer, by so doing flinging it in the face of every one who had been moved with sympathy in his behalf; by so much not only insulted also the governor but the great and worthy state he represented; what would you say of a man who so trampled on the grace of men?

Surely you would have no words with which to describe the shock it gave you, the wound upon all your human sensibilities; certainly words would fail you to depict the shame, the outrage and the added sin of such an one.

And yet, that is your attitude, the attitude of everyone who rejects the Son of God, crucified and risen as Lord and Saviour; the attitude of everyone who refuses the salvation offered through Him.

You take God's grace, you spit upon it and fling it back in His face.

Surely this is sin and the aggravation of sin. It is sin exceedingly sinful.

But your sin is greater than that.

What would you say if a man saw another killed and weltering in his blood, if he should leap upon that murdered man; upon his mutilated body and grind it in all its clotted crimson beneath his heel? Could you fittingly cry out against the unspeakable brutality, the beastly outrage?

And yet this is what you do when you reject Jesus Christ as God presents Him to you, hanging on that Roman cross.

The blood spilling out from His fast-nailed body is the blood of the covenant, the red seal of the fore-determined purpose of God. It is *the most holy, the most sacred thing* in the universe of God—*that blood of Christ*.

When you reject this crucified Son of God you are trampling this blood as it flows earthward under your feet and counting it an unholy and *common thing*. (See Heb. 10:29)

Who may describe the monstrosity of such a sin?

The angels of God look at you with amazement, pain and horror.

But you do more than trample the blood of Christ beneath your feet when you refuse to accept Him.

The death of Christ was either a heaven-ordained sacrifice for sin, or just an inconsequential and brutal murder.

If you claim it as a sacrifice God will accept it on your behalf as an offering for sin.

If you refuse so to claim it you become a rejecter of Christ, take sides with those who crucified Him and whether consciously or unconsciously justify the attitude of those who killed Him, killing Him as they did, for a deceiver and blasphemer. But, since He was neither deceiver nor blasphemer, their action in killing Him was murder; and as you reject Christ because you do not believe in His claim you become identified with them as rejecters and with them guilty of murder in God's sight.

But mark the category of this murder.

There is patricide, matricide, sororicide, suicide, but this is nothing less than—*deicide*, the *murder of God*.

The murder of God! How is it possible?

I answer:

The Son of God was God the Son. He took humanity into union with Himself, a new, distinct humanity which He Himself created for Himself that in it He might taste death as a sacrifice for every man. Through His humanity then He is either sacrificed or murdered. When you refuse Him as your sacrifice, you stand, whether intentionally or not, with those who slew Him. He Himself has said there is no middle ground. If you are not for Him you are against Him; as it is written:

"He that is not with me, *is against me*;" (Matt. 12:30; Luke 11:23).

You are guilty as an accessory to the act.

You—the rejecter of Christ—are guilty of deicide.

What a sin of sins is this!

But you do more than join or justify or become accessory to the crowd that killed Him.

You proclaim God to be a liar.

As it is written:

"... he that believeth *not God hath made him a liar; because he believeth not the record that God gave of his Son.*"
(1 John 5:10)

Every moment you hesitate to accept and believe God's testimony concerning His Son you proclaim openly and squarely, in the face of the whole universe that He is a liar.

Think of it! standing under the high heavens of God, walking about every day, enjoying His providence, His mercy and care and yet, at every step, announcing that—

God is a liar.

O you who reject Jesus Christ, who deliberately repudiate Him from your life; you who reject the crucified Christ as the sacrifice which God in His infinite mercy and grace offers you, and pleads with you to accept, *you are the greatest of all sinners on earth.*

You are guilty of the sin of sins—*Unbelief.*

Atonement has been made for every sin under heaven but—*the sin of unbelief.*

Every other sin under heaven, no matter how black, may be forgiven.

There is no atonement for unbelief.

There is no possible forgiveness for unbelief.

GOD HIMSELF CANNOT SAVE AN UNBELIEVER.

So great a judgment, you say, so terrific an attitude for so small a thing as unbelief!

Small is it, think you, this thing of unbelief? Unbelief has brewed every tear on earth, caused every disease, inspired and operated every tragedy, nerved the hand of every wickedness. It separates parents and children, husbands and wives, friends and comrades, nation from nation; breeds the viper of suspicion, of envy, jealousy and hatred; lights the flame of every war and digs every grave. It is lawlessness, anarchy, repudiation of dignities, the breaking down of standards. It is the father and mother of blasphemy, and were it unchecked, would blot the name of God from every book, would turn righteousness into unrighteousness, virtue into vice. Had it all the power it seeks, could it accomplish all which its malevolent genius ordains, it would fling God from His very throne and turn the universe into a chaos of recriminating, self-accusing and hopeless hell.

For such a sin God, even Almighty God, has no choice of action.

For it there can be only judgment, condemnation, damnation.

Thus, and in the nature of the case, the Gospel brings, not only free and full salvation, but ordained, definite and sure damnation.

That is what the apostle means when he says it is a “. . . savour of death unto death; and to the other the savour of life unto life.” (II Cor. 2:16)

It will bring you to justification or condemnation.

There is no place of compromise.

You cannot come into this place, and hear this Gospel I preach and then go out as you came in.

I am no mere Bible lecturer. I should consider such a title a dishonor. I am an ambassador of Christ. I am standing here not as a debater, but as a messenger of the Most High God. I am here to magnify my office. I am here to proclaim the truth whether men hear or whether they forbear. This Gospel I am preaching to you will save you or damn you. It will bring you to Christ or it will put you in the place of those who reject and crucify Him.

This is the reason why the heavens are silent.

God and the heaven-host are waiting to know what you will do.

God has done all He can do to make salvation complete.

You have only to *believe* and to *receive*.

God is patiently waiting to know what you will do.

He has called.

His very patience and waiting is a call.

This is my first proposition:

God is calling on all to profess faith in the name of His Son.

II. *There is a profession of Christ which gives all the evidences of being genuine and acceptable to God.*

The genuine professor is first and beyond all things else—a believer.

Any fool can doubt.

It requires neither intellect nor genius to disbelieve.

"I don't believe it," is oftentimes the response a man gives to a statement the first time made to him upon some matter with which he is not acquainted.

Unbelief is the common state.

While it is true faith cometh by hearing and hearing by the Word of God, it is also true that faith, through grace is the gift of God.

The moment of faith, of genuine faith, the individual bears witness of this endowment of God and union with Christ.

It is written:

"He that believeth on the Son hath everlasting life:" (John 3:36).

The genuine professor believes in the Bible from cover to cover.

He believes in fiat creation, original sin, the fall of man, the virgin birth, the atoning sacrifice, the resurrection of Christ and the whole body of Christian doctrine.

He believes in the Bible, not because he is always able to reason about the things it proclaims, but because he accepts it as the Word of God. He starts with that proposition. He rests upon it as a "thus saith the Lord."

The genuine professor has been regenerated.

God has wrought more omnipotently in him than when He formed the worlds. He has wrought and formed within him the very life and nature of His Son. He has made him a living, daily miracle. He has transformed his body into a temple, into the sacred blood-redeemed and blood-washed shrine of the Holy Ghost, He who is the personal, essential holiness of the Godhead.

The genuine professor of Christianity reverses his old life.

He hates the things he once loved.

He once loved sin. He rolled it as a sweet morsel under his tongue. His heart was a cage of unclean and untamed things. He did not love the things of God and Christ.

Now he hates sin. He hates the memory of his past life. It embitters and shames him to think of it. He seeks more and more to hide it, bury it deep beneath the obliterating blood of Christ. He loves the things of God and the "way" of Christ.

He seeks to do the will of God.

The one thing he supremely wishes to know is the mind of God,—what God's thought and will concerning him may be.

He yields to the Spirit.

He seeks to bring forth the clustered fruit of the Spirit. His unceasing aim is to build up a character for God, to become the reincarnation and translation of Christ to men.

He loves the House of God.

With the Psalmist he will say:

"I was glad when they said unto me, Let us go into the house of the LORD." (Ps. 122:1)

He loves to pray.

Prayer to Him means something more than prayer by rote. It is true he will bring his burdens and his cares and spread them out before the Lord. He will call upon Him for deliverance and daily help; but his true joy is to go into his closet, shut the door, be alone with God, talk to Him, pour out his heart, feel the conscious response of God in his soul, joy in the intimate communion which permits him to talk with God, till, sometimes in the rapture of it the tears are on his cheek and ecstasy in his soul.

He loves the written Word of God.

That Word to him is as a fountain of crystal water; it is an oasis in the desert; it is daily food, it is bread from Heaven; it is light in the spiritual darkness; it is music; it is song in the night; it is a harp touched by invisible fingers; it is a trumpet full of the shouts of victory; it is a telescope with which to look into the "far country," the city of God and the throne of Christ; it is nexus with God; it is a wireless telegraph, the Holy Spirit is the Hertzian wave,

the pages of the Book the receiver; it is a mirror in which he may behold the glory of the Lord and by contemplation within it be transfigured into the same image from glory unto glory; it is a university, the president the Holy Spirit, the faculty, prophets, priests and kings, the curriculum the eternal truth of God.

The genuine professor recognizes that he is the bond slave of Christ.

He owns that he has been bought and paid for with the precious blood of Christ. He confesses that he does not belong to himself but wholly to Christ, all he has and is. He gives Him his time, his talent, his substance, and, above all, himself.

He is a worker.

He cannot comprehend how a Christian can be redeemed and saved, then loaf on God. He has no place in his thought for anyone who names the name of Christ, then sits down, folds his hands and is willing to do nothing while he receives the bounties of the Lord. With Paul he is ever constrained to ask:

“... Lord, what wilt thou have me to do?” (Acts 9:6)

He is anxious to save the lost.

He knows the difficulty in reaching them. Time and again he feels himself helpless in the matter; but his heart is earnest, his purpose sincere and he is ready to be used whenever the door of opportunity is opened. The word fitly spoken that is so good to utter comes easily to his lips at the appointed moment.

The love of Christ constrains him.

Not *his* love to Christ, but the *love of Christ to him*. Now and then he may feel his own love grow cold or failing, but every glimpse at the cross of Christ, at the crimson stain made there for him, fills him afresh and holds him, carries him through desert places, stays him in hours of conflict and brings him over many a bridgeless gulf, through many a doorless wall.

What he does, he does for Christ's sake.

This is ever his rallying cry and the impulse that lifts him above his natural wish.

He rejoices in the Lord his Saviour.

The joys of earth fade, the pleasures of the flesh wither, but in the Lord there are joys which flow as from a never-failing fountain.

He is full of assurance.

He knows, should he die, he would be absent from his home in this body and present at his home with the Lord. He knows in a moment he would pass through the gates of the upper city and walk on the banks of the river of life. If he has been well taught he knows the Coming of the Lord is *imminent*, and that any moment which shall please the Lord he may be caught up to meet Him, be clothed with immortality and be with Him forevermore. He is a saved man and knows it and daily brings forth “the things which accompany salvation.”

He is compared in Scripture to the wise virgins.

The wise virgins not only took oil in their lamps but in the vessels with their lamps. He not only bears the lamp of profession, he has the Holy Spirit in his body as the continual replenishment of the light he bears.

He is compared to the man who built his house on a rock.

The black clouds gather. Midnight is turned to midnight. The surcharged clouds break. They pour forth their flood. The winds sweep the rain in gusty raffles. The down pour becomes a tidal wave. Wave after wave beats upon the rock and the increasing winds roar and shriek and fling themselves in mad, discordant fury against that house, but it falls not—it is *founded upon a rock*.

That rock is Christ, the risen, immortal Christ.

The professor is a true and genuine Christian. He has done the will of God in founding himself upon that Rock; founding himself in all sincerity and truth on Christ, his profession is as the storm-smitten but immovable rock.

III. *There is a profession of Christ which gives no evidence of being genuine.*

Unregenerate professors do not love the House of God.

There are, it is said, in this city, a million persons, Protestants, who once professed the name of Christ who

rarely, if ever, go to church.

Dislike for the house of God and the assembly of the saints bears tremendous witness against the genuineness of such professors.

They do not love the Word of God.

They will read anything else but that. They will read the daily blanket sheet filled with falsehood and current scandal. They will read the lightest novels whose worthlessness is so manifest they slip from the mind with such ease that continuous reading destroys memory and fills the brain with emptiness.

They do not love to pray.

They never pray except when they are sick; or some one whom they love is near to die, or when their own plans fail and they are shut sheer up in some impasse from which they cannot emerge, then they cry out in despair. They know nothing of the prayer that breathes out the soul and carries it as on wings to God. They do not actually pray. They may *say* prayers, but they do not pray; they do not talk to God. A prayerless soul is a godless soul. A prayerless professor gives no evidence that he or she is aught else but a mere professor.

They do not care for Christian company.

They prefer to find their friends among the worldlings. They are at home with them and not with spiritual Christians. Spiritual Christians exceedingly bore them; their conversation annoys them; they do not feel at home or at ease with them.

They do not change their old life nor their old way of living.

Their speech is careless, flippant. The speech of professed Christian men is sometimes filled with slang, with "inconvenient" jest and not infrequently, with profanity, and is more or less redolent with the suggestions of downright unbelief.

They are lovers of pleasure more than lovers of God.

They show none of the fruit of the spirit.

They have a name to live and are spiritually dead.

They may at times be religious, but are never Spiritual.

Between religiousness and spirituality there is an Atlantic ocean difference. The difference is as great as that between death and life. An idolator is religious, but he is spiritually dead. Religious forms and beautiful ceremonies, without the Spirit of Christ, are like the flowers laid on the breast of the dead, their very beauty of form and delight of fragrance serve only to draw attention to the fact of death.

Professors who do not manifest Christ in their daily lives are stumbling blocks to non-professors.

They are a scandal to the church.

They are a dishonor to God.

They do more harm to the cause of Christ than all the open sinners and infidels in the world.

IV. A great separation will take place when our Lord comes down into the air to receive His Church to Himself.

In previous sermons I have shown you the Lord is coming in a three-fold glory.

He is coming in the glory of the Father—as *His Son*.

He is coming in the glory of the angels—as *their Master*.

He is coming in His *own* glory—as *God the Son*.

He is coming with ten thousand times ten thousand and thousands of the angelic host.

Every cloud will be a chariot of burnished glory.

The wide, measureless spaces of the heavens will be filled with song,—the songs the Heavenly choirs have been practicing since that hour when the morning stars sang together and all the sons of God shouted for joy.

The earth will quiver at the sound of approaching glory.

The mountains will melt and flow down.

The ocean from all its depths will break with awe-inspiring thunder on all its shores.

Every voice in heaven, in earth and under the earth will salute Him as He comes to reveal Himself the wonderful, the mighty God, the everlasting Father, the Prince of Peace.

But, *before* He comes in glory such as this, He will descend in sudden soft and *secret* fashion, like a *thief in the night* into the upper air.

He will call every genuine professor of His name up to meet Him. The dead in Christ will be raised, the living will be changed. They shall be clothed with His likeness. They shall be made immortal. He will take them through the wide, open gates of pearl into the golden and transparent city. They shall pass through a civil service examination at His judgment seat of reward. He will reward the slightest deed done in His name, the cup of cold water given, the kindly word spoken, the hand of helpfulness extended. He will assign to each the place he is to occupy in the coming kingdom. But as soon as He takes the church up to meet Him He will shut the door of Heaven.

This will be the moment of the great separation.

Up to that hour all the living will have lived together, the good and the bad, the righteous and unrighteous, believer and unbeliever. All will have enjoyed the common providence, the unfailing grace. There has been outwardly no distinction in the relation of human beings to the Heaven of God; but now, all those of the living who belong to Christ, who are really His, will be taken out of the earth. All who are not His will be shut out from Heaven's gates, Heaven's joys and left behind to the hardening and scourging judgment, the certain woe and the long time and often warned anguish that is coming on the earth, and for a space will make of it an arena of indescribable anguish and suffering, a world in which all who have missed the invitations of grace and rejected the mercy of God will find themselves in their woe and suffering sealed unto the coming and final doom.

There will be four classes left behind to meet this fearful hour:

Unregenerate church-members.

False systems of Christianity.

False teachers.

The world of unbelievers.

Unregenerate church-members.

The very title seems appalling.

But such are all those who are mere professors of the name of Christ.

Multitudes are made such by the doctrine and practice of

Infant Baptism.

There is no such teaching in the Word of God.

If I were to offer a man a million of dollars to find a single direct text authorizing the baptism of infants, or a single instance recorded in the New Testament where an infant of days was baptized, and should I give the seeker after the text a million years in which to find it, should he in the providence of God be spared to live that long, he would die poor and be buried in the tattered rags of his long-time poverty.

Baptism in Holy Scripture is a confession of *individual* faith, that Christ *died*, was *buried*, and *rose again*.

Such baptism must be preceded by intelligent personal and responsible faith.

The disaster in the doctrine of infant baptism is not merely in the fact that it is not taught in nor warranted by the Word of God and is in itself a denial of the basis and ground of true baptism, but in the fact that it is taught as the means and mode of *regeneration*.

Infant baptism is only another name for *baptismal regeneration*.

The word of God knows nothing about baptismal regeneration.

It may be objected the son of God Himself has said: "... Except a man be born of (out of) water and of (out of) the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God." (John 3:5)

It may be affirmed that in speaking of water the Son of God was referring to baptism and declaring that in and by and through the act or administration of baptism the Spirit operated upon the soul of the baptized and produced regeneration.

The answer to this is to be found in Saint Paul's Epistle to the *Ephesians, fifth chapter, twenty-sixth verse.*

"... the washing of water by (in) the word."

The Lord is speaking of the cleansing and sanctifying of the Church in and by the Word.

In His address to the disciples at the last supper He declared they were clean, sanctified and set apart by His Word, He said:

"Now ye are clean through the word which I have spoken unto you." (John 15:3)

In the expression, "washing of water by the word," the spiritually quickening and cleansing power of the Word to the soul is compared to the washing and cleansing action of water upon the body.

The energy which gives the Word its quickening, cleansing power is the Spirit.

When therefore, our Lord says, "except a man be born (quickened) of water and of the spirit," He is not using water as a symbol of baptism; for, that would be making a symbol, the symbol of a symbol and in the connection would have no meaning at all as coordinate with the spirit. On the contrary, He is using water as a symbol of the Word. And in this the water is legitimately coordinated with Spirit. The Lord is here setting forth the fact that the Spirit and the Word are the alone efficient means of regeneration.

The Spirit is the *agent*, the Word the *instrument*.

The Word is preached, the Spirit quickens it, the spiritual life enters in, the individual receives the new birth.

This operation of the Spirit and the Word is illustrated by our Lord in answer to the question of Nicodemus.

Nicodemus cannot understand how a man may be born again; or, rather, "quickened from above," when he has already been quickened, and born from below, on earth.

The Lord tells him that as Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, so must the Son of Man be lifted up that whosoever believeth in Him should not perish but have everlasting life. (See John 3:14,15)

The bitten Israelites got life by looking away from themselves to the crucified serpent on the cross (it was a cross). They got life by taking God at His Word about it.

Just so, you look away from self and all the hopes self holds out. You look at Christ on the cross. You take God at His Word about Him. You accept Him on the authority of God's Word. The Word enters your soul like a seed, the Spirit quickens it, you have life in Christ, you are saved.

Baptism cannot do that.

All the water in the world though it were poured upon you like a flood; all the water in the world though you were plunged in it as in an ocean; all the baptism in the world be it scriptural or unscriptural and though the name of the Father Son and Holy Ghost were pronounced upon it a thousand times in each individual case, would never quicken a human soul, nor give it a vision of the kingdom of God.

No! only the Spirit and the Word in coordination through the exercise of personal faith can do this.

Baptismal regeneration then is impossible.

The very proposition would shut out from Christ and the kingdom the one person on earth whom He particularly said should be with Him in paradise and be assured of the kingdom. The thief on the cross (See Luke 23:43)—and every believer in Christ who died and for one reason or another had not been baptized.

Infant Baptism is unthinkable.

It does not take the place of circumcision as the seal of the covenant. The seal of the covenant of grace is the *Holy Spirit*, as it is written: "... after that ye believed, ye were sealed with that holy Spirit of promise," (Eph. 1:13).

And again:

"... the holy Spirit of God, whereby ye are sealed unto the day of redemption." (Eph. 4:30)

Infant baptism could not take the place of circumcision in the very nature of the case. *Circumcision applies only to the male sex.* Infant baptism is unthinkable because in every case of recorded baptism in the New Testament it is preceded by the exercise of personal faith.

But, infant baptism produces measureless disaster.

It deceives the individual. At confirmation the person who has been baptized in infancy is confirmed in the

belief that through this so-called act of baptism, through the agency of water the Spirit operated *independently of the individual's own personal attitude in the matter, and on the strength of the faith of others, of those who stood sponsors for him*; and that during all these years from childhood, no matter what may have been his character he has had the Christ life in him. Again and again such a person counting himself sincere in his early regeneration feels no further responsibility, accepts confirmation and is made into a *natural* and *unregenerate* member of the Church of Christ.

But, let no one go away under the impression I am saying all those who have been baptized in infancy are unregenerate. God forbid I should even suggest such a thing; for again and again in the days leading up to confirmation or "first communion," many are laid hold of by the Spirit through the Word of the Gospel and are actually quickened, regenerated, saved.

What I am saying is this—that baptism does not do it and no infant that ever lived was regenerated by it, or ever will be. The grace of God can and does rise above human failure and human error and call the elect. But it is beyond all possible dispute that through the *unscriptural* doctrine of infant baptism or baptismal regeneration in any case, multitudes have been made into unregenerate members of the professing Church.

Unregenerate members are made through the appeal to and the exercise of merely fleshly emotions.

Our Lord speaks of a certain class who are like the seed which fell upon rocky ground. It sprang up immediately, but soon withered away and did so because—*it had no root*.

In these days of "modernized" evangelism through appeals made to the natural emotions, the organized effort in the name of Christ for a moral and fleshly "clean-up," there are multitudes swept into the profession of Christ. They imagine because they no longer drink, nor use profane language, nor lead immoral lives and are more gentle and better mannered, that they are Christians. Many of them awake to their own self-deception, grow indifferent and fall away. They become members of the professing Church. They never were regenerated. *They had no root in Christ*.

All unregenerate members of the professing Church will be shut out of Heaven and left behind to judgment when our Lord Jesus Christ comes for His true Church.

False systems of Christianity will be left behind.

Our Lord Jesus Christ warned there would be such false systems. He foretold it in the parable of the wheat and tares. (Matt. 13:24-30)

The wheat was sown in the field.

An enemy came along in the night while men slept and sowed tares (cheat, darnel) among the wheat.

They grew side by side.

They appeared so much alike the farmer commanded his servants to let them grow till the harvest.

All the while they were growing side by side it was a *mixed field*.

At the harvest time the reapers went forth and separated the tares from the wheat, gathered them into bundles and bound them that they might be burned.

It is to be remembered the field does not symbolize the Church. Our Lord says it is a symbol of the world.

The wheat is a symbol of the children of the Kingdom, those who are not only professors, but possessors of Christ—Christians.

The tares also represent the profession of Christ in the world; but tares are *counterfeit* wheat. Tares therefore represent *counterfeit Christianity, counterfeit Christians* in the world.

The world is full of these Devil-wrought and counterfeit systems of Christianity.

Unitarianism is a counterfeit system of Christianity.

Unitarianism denies the triunity of God.

According to Unitarianism Jesus Christ is the Son of God, but not God the Son.

In this proposition it denies the declaration of the Apostle John that in His pre-existent state our Lord was God the Word and created all things. (See John 1:1-3)

It denies the later statement of John that Jesus Christ is true God and eternal life. (See I John 5:20)

It denies Paul's affirmation that before the Son of God came into this world He was in the "form of God." (See Phil. 2:6)

It denies Paul's statement that by Him God the Father created all things, that in Him all things consist, that the fulness of the godhead dwelt in Him bodily and that He upholds all things by the Word of His power. (Col. 1:16,17; Heb. 1:2,3)

It denies the Lord's own statement that He was of one substance and being with the Father; that before the world was He sat on the infinite throne in Heaven with Him, sharing and manifesting His glory; that He was self-existent as the Father and could do all that God the Father could do. (See John 10:30; 17:5; 5:21,26)

It denies the overwhelming, climacteric and conclusive statement of the Father:

Unto the Son the Father says:

"... *Thy throne, O GOD, is forever and ever:*" (Heb. 1:8; Ps. 45:6).

The Apostle John says:

"Whosoever denieth the Son, the same hath not the Father:" (I John 2:23).

The Father and the Son *are one* in being and essence. To be without the one is to be without the other.

The Unitarian who denies the deity of Christ, has not the Father, is not a child of God, and cannot be saved.

The Unitarian who believes in Unitarianism will with that false system be shut out from Heaven when the Lord comes for His Church.

Universalism is a system of counterfeit Christianity.

Universalism teaches that Christ died for all men and in His dying paid the penalty against all. This is true of all, whether they accept the death of Christ as a sacrifice or claim Him as a substitute. Since the penalty of all has been paid, all will be saved from the original doom. No matter though men continue in sin up to the hour of death they will be saved.

Such a system if it does not put an actual premium upon sin does put a premium upon spiritual indifference and nullifies every appeal and warning against continuance in sin.

But above and beyond all this, in assuring salvation to all men, Universalism denies the solemn and warning utterance of the Son of God Himself.

He said:

"... he that believeth not the Son *shall not see life*; but the *wrath of God abideth on him.*" (John 3:36)

Could anything be plainer than that? The unbeliever *shall not see life*.

If the unbeliever dies in his unbelief he shall not only not see life (the eternal life of Christ) but the *wrath of God* will *abide* on him on the other side of death and the grave—through eternity will abide on him.

To teach men they are saved; to fill them with the hope of life and then let them go into eternity to exist forever unsaved, forever under the down pressure and weight of the *abiding wrath* of God! Is there anything more wickedly deceptive and betraying of the soul than that?

Universalists who have not turned in faith to God, who have not been regenerated by the Spirit will be left behind when the Lord comes, to meet and suffer the unspeakable woe.

Roman Catholicism is a false and counterfeit system of Christianity.

It is a compound of *Judaism, Paganism, and Apostate Christianity*. It has the priesthood of Judaism, the idolatry of Paganism, and the invented and perverted doctrines of Apostate Christianity.

It teaches that the bread and wine in the Lord's Supper may be transformed by the word of the priest into the actual body and blood of Christ. It teaches that the priest has power to offer up the Son of God in sacrifice, that His crucifixion is continual, teaching this in plain and open contradiction to the word of the Apostle that Christ died once for all and by one sacrifice has perfected forever those who believe. (See Heb. 10:10,14)

It teaches purgatory, a half way purifying hell for those who die, out of which for a certified sum of money they may eventually be liberated by the priest and having been purified by the fire may enter heaven at last.

It teaches the immaculate conception of the Virgin Mary, that she was specially conceived without sin in order that she might be the sinless mother of her sinless Son. It miraculously removes her from earth and sets her up to be the queen of heaven. It thrusts her in as primary and supreme intercessor between the Christian and the high priestly interceding Christ Himself.

It teaches the supremacy of the Church to the written Word, holds the written Word to be dependent on and secondary to the authority of the Church, claims the right to originate doctrine, claims temporal sovereignty over the kingdoms and nations of earth, teaches the infallibility of the Pope and makes his decisions inerrant and binding.

The Holy Scriptures in an amazing forecast and altogether divine prophecy paint the picture of this system under the figure of the woman who hides leaven in the meal (See Matt. 13:33), as Jezebel of Thyatira (See Rev. 2:20), as the scarlet woman, the mistress of the ten-horned beast, as Babylon the Great, the mother of harlots, as the city which in the days of the Apostle John ruled over the Kings of the earth, even Rome, and as filled and drunken with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus. (See Rev. 17)

The history of this church has been the history of bloody persecution, of stakes, of racks, of inquisitorial torture to all who opposed or offended her.

Wherever the Church has been dominant she has sunken the people into ignorance and superstition and is in the very nature of the case a menace to the liberty of peoples and a barrier to spiritual growth in and knowledge of God.

There are, undoubtedly, many in Romanism who are sincere and devout Christians and in spite of error and false teaching are filled with genuine faith in and devotion to the Son of God. But the system with its doctrines of baptismal regeneration, auricular confession, the priestly power of absolution holds out the false salvation of an unscriptural Christ, a deceptive and soul destroying hope.

When the Lord comes this system will be left to terrific judgments at the hand of the nations which once supported and have been controlled by it. All those who have not received the life of the risen Christ in the soul through sanctified and genuine faith in Him will be left to share the fearful judgment and the anguish of the system of which they have formed a part.

Christian Science is a system of Counterfeit Christianity.

It is neither scientific, nor Christian.

It is not scientific.

It is not scientific because it denies the existence of matter.

When a Christian Scientist strikes his head against a wall, by the logic of his proposition he must deny not only the contact, the concussion and the reacting blow, but the wall itself. There is, there can be, no other wall than such as the imagination of mortal mind may self-deceivingly fashion for itself.

It is of little consequence therefore what Christian Science may say about matter.

It is not Christian.

It is not Christian because it denies every fundamental doctrine of Christianity.

It denies the Trinity of Godhead.

It denies the personality of God.

It denies the blood of Jesus was of any more avail when shed on the cross than when flowing through His veins in daily life.

It denies Jesus was an actual person. In giving birth to Him the Virgin Mary only gave birth to an abstract idea, not to a body of flesh.

Jesus and Christ are distinct.

Jesus is the human idea, Christ is the eternal principle of truth. Jesus was an apparition only. Christ is the abiding principle.

Jesus never actually died. How could that die which never actually had been born? and yet with remarkable reasoning Christian Science makes Him continue alive in the tomb during the three days in which the disciples had

been self-deceived in imagining he had ever lived.

But this method of reasoning is of a piece with the whole system.

It denies that Jesus exists today.

Taking them in order, Christian Science is guilty of four fundamental falsehoods.

The denial of matter.

The denial of sin.

The denial of sickness.

The denial of death.

The other evening I witnessed a glorious sight.

It was the vision of sunset.

All the far upper dome of the heavens was turning into the blue of night, with here and there a pale, faint star. Below them was a golden city with towers and turret of sapphire beauty. There was a river that poured its marvellous silver by shores of amethyst and rose.

Toward the horizon great clouds like glowing embers from a burning palace broke and fell.

Then through a highway of shattered and splintered color the chariot of the sun went down leaving the night winds as they rose to sweep away the dust of gold and crimson the fiery wheel had flung as its farewell to the day.

I have seen the mountains standing in sentinel outline against the descending sky. I have seen the valleys and the plains of earth, wooded hills and waving fields of grain. I have seen the rivers gliding to the sea and have watched the great ocean as it broke in billowy waves upon the resounding, rock-ribbed shore.

I have trodden upon shifting sand, on granite rock, and yielding soil. I have touched and seen and known matter in every form.

And yet, this Christian Science has the audacity and the mendacity to stand and say there is—*no matter*.

Little wonder is it that it has no place upon the field of carnage, amid the hell of battle thunder, in the wards of hospitals, by the beds of wounded men, smitten with shot and shell and shrapnel. Little wonder that it dare not go amid these scenes and lifting up the blatant, babbling talk, with insulting, outrageous utterance insist that these awful visions, these facts of blood and anguish are but the fantasies of mortal mind and that matter in a soldiers' wrenched and torn and bruised body, and the sword, or bayonet or gun that wrecked him and made him a broken, helpless thing for life, do not exist.

Everywhere in the earth there are judges, lawyers, courthouses, prisons, men behind the prison bars, gibbets and electric chairs. Everywhere there is violation of law, the tragedy, the flowing tears, the spilling of blood, anguish, sorrow, remorse. Everywhere bodies are suffering, hearts are aching and lives are blasted because of sin. So great, so wide-spread, so universal is sin, so indisputable the fact, so great the mystery, so measureless its power, its insistence and the inability to overcome it, abolish it or even modify it, that men who have studied it, sought to resist it, put lock and bar and chain upon it, have shrunk back aghast at its force, its undeniable reality.

And yet, this Christian Science has the audacity and the mendacity to stand up and say there is—*no sin*.

Everywhere in the world you will find doctors, surgeons, hospitals, sanitoriums. Everywhere you will find human beings suffering the torture of pain, stricken, eaten up, devoured by disease, disease so multifarious, so complicated, so variant, so involving of every square inch of organic animal existence; disease so awful, so terrible, making human beings so repulsive, so dangerous that even those who love them are forced to hide them from the public gaze; sickness, disease, pain so immense, so all-pervading and threatening to the common weal that the keenest brains, the most unwearied study and the most loyal and unselfish devotion of man to man have been employed to combat, to relieve, to cure; and yet, in spite of ages of consecration; in spite of poured-out means, of genius, of invention and application; although men have searched nature's laboratories and brought in the service of nature's laws, disease, suffering, sickness in every shade, degree and form, conceivable and inconceivable lay hold sooner or later in one fashion or another upon every human body, even upon the body of the most expert and persistent healer of Christian Science itself.

And yet Christian Science has the audacity and mendacity to say there is—*no sickness*.

Everywhere in the world you will find the silent cities of the dead. Wherever you go you will see the white shaft, the tombstone, the marble urn, the mound that hides the buried body of the well beloved. Everywhere some one is leaving these mortal shores, and the living close their no longer seeing eyes, fold their dead, still hands and prepare them for that sleep within the dust from which no tears, no heartache of longing, no beseeching, petitioning word of yearning love can wake them.

Everywhere are the dead.

In every house, sooner or later, with unbidden and unwelcome step comes the silent messenger—death.

And yet, Christian Science has the audacity and mendacity to stand up before the sons of men and say there is—*no death*.

Yonder at Boston, in Mount Auburn, behind the iron and guarded bars, deep within the depths of a voiceless tomb lies the mouldering and corrupting body, the dust, the whitening bones of a woman, who, in contradiction to that Lord who never called a woman to be an apostle, never appointed a woman to any office in the Church, never authorized or commissioned a woman to preach; in direct repudiation of the Holy Ghost and apostolic law which forbids a woman to teach and expressly commands her to be silent in the assembly of the saints; in that grave at Auburn lies the body of a woman who set up this false, this so called “Church” of Christian Science, denied matter, sin, sickness and said there was no such thing as death.

Tonight, over the tomb where this much-married, much-divorced woman lies mouldering, corrupt and forever broken, the living God whose Christ she burlesqued, counterfeited, betrayed and denied, writes in burning letters of scintillating light these fearful and amazing words:

“HERE ENDETH THE GREAT LIE!”

Russellism is another system of counterfeit Christianity.

Annihilation of the finally impenitent is a doctrine held and taught by different sects.

The most prominent, the one whose books, whose literature has had the widest circulation and has been made known to, and more or less affected millions of people is the cult generally known as *Russellism*.

Russellism teaches that before He was born into this world our Lord Jesus Christ was the Archangel Michael; that in giving birth to Jesus the Virgin Mary was giving birth to the archangel in human form.

Jesus had but one nature, the nature of Adam before he sinned and fell.

The fundamental principle of Russellism as of its kindred systems is, that death is the—*cessation of being*.

The fundamental principle of redemption is, that our Lord Jesus Christ died on the cross, not only as a sacrifice for sin but as a *substitute* for the sinner.

A substitute must pay in kind the obligation or debt of the principal whose place he takes.

Since our Lord Jesus Christ must take the place and pay the penalty of those whom He redeems and saves; since, according to the teaching of Russellism death is the cessation of being, then when our Lord Jesus Christ died, *He ceased to be, He went out of existence, He was actually annihilated.*

The logic is unerring, sure, beyond question. The founder of Russellism accepted the logic and taught—

THE ANNIHILATION OF OUR LORD’S HUMANITY ON THE CROSS.

He taught that the man Jesus had ceased to exist; that when He died on the cross *He was dead forever*.

That you may see this is no mere partisan, nor imaginative deduction of mine I will read to you some extracts from the text book of Russellism, “Bible Studies,” the very words and teachings of Russell himself.

Bible Studies, Volume 5, page 362.

“Our Lord’s being or soul was non-existent during the period of death.”

Bible Studies, Volume I, page 230.

“His human existence ended on the cross.”

Bible Studies, Volume 5, page 454.

“It was necessary, not only that the man Christ Jesus should die, but just as necessary that the man Christ Jesus should never live again, should remain dead . . . to all eternity.”

Bible Studies, Volume 2, page 155.

"He has no further use for a human body."

Bible Studies, Volume 2, page 129.

"We know nothing about what became of it (the body of the Lord after death) . . . whether it (the body of our risen Lord), was dissolved into gases . . . no one knows."

Bible Studies, Volume 5, page 466.

"The man Christ Jesus suffered for us death in the most absolute sense of the word—'EVERLASTING DESTRUCTION?'"

Bible Studies, Volume 5, page 454.

"The man Jesus is dead—FOREVER DEAD."

In the nature of the case, if the personality of a being is destroyed, it cannot be raised again from the dead—*There is nothing to raise.* Any so-called resurrection would not be a resurrection but a distinct, *new creation*, as much so as that of the first man. As it would not be the same personality, but another and distinct personality from that which died, then, if Christ were actually destroyed on the Cross as to soul and being (and this is personality), any pretended resurrection of Christ would be simply the pretended resurrection of *another Christ*. It would not be the original Christ but—*a false Christ*.

This is the Christ Russellism preaches.

The Christ Russellism preaches is a false Christ before he dies and another and pretended. Christ in the pseudo-resurrection after he dies.

The teaching of Russellism that our Lord Jesus Christ was the Archangel Michael, that he was annihilated on the cross, that His humanity was forever destroyed, and that His body was possibly turned to gas, to say nothing of the different bodies which it is said He assumed after His resurrection, bodies that were put on and dissolved into thin air at will, is a teaching so full of blasphemy, so coarse, so utterly brutal, so wholly devilish and wicked that human language furnishes no vocabulary of sufficiently keen and cauterizing words or phrases whereby I may denounce as I describe its vulgarity and mad treason against the Son of God.

Like the author of Christian Science the founder of Russellism has descended into the grave, and as the rich man of old, has awakened to find that death does not end all; and that the being and existence which denied the wonder and glory of the Person of our Lord still continues, but as a condition where repentance is of no avail, where the awakening comes too late.

I am unwilling to go into any further analysis of this system now, this system which offers a second chance to all who have died out of Christ and puts a premium on sin by assuring those who are determined to die without Christ that the more they yield to sin here, the more probable it will be when the second chance is given they will accept and at last be saved; and that those who do not care to accept the Gospel offered them will be permitted to die the second death and be blotted out of existence. In other words, no matter how often they may have rejected Christ they will have another chance to be saved, and if they prefer annihilation, if they wish to be asphyxiated, smothered out by fire into eternal unconsciousness, everlasting destruction, eternal cessation of being they can have that privilege.

According to Russellism there is no such thing as future, endless, conscious punishment for sin.

This Gospel of Russellism ought to be hailed with joy by every thief and murderer.

There are always two immense outlooks:

Reject the Gospel, commit all the sin you like, die, be unconscious, be brought into existence again, have another chance to hear the Gospel, accept, be saved and enjoy eternal felicity.

Reject the Gospel, live a life of sin to the fullest capacity, then become unconscious or go out of being, be brought to life again, have the gospel presented, be given a hundred years of probation to live as Adam lived before he sinned, then reject the Gospel and go out of existence.

Surely, this is a gospel that ought to win converts in every jail.

Beyond question it is a gospel that fills the Devil with delight.

When Christ comes the followers of Russell will be left outside the gate to woe and death here—then will they indeed be raised from the dead in the second resurrection, die a second time, but instead of annihilation they shall exist forever under the wrath of that God and Christ they were taught to deny.

False teachers in the professing Church will be left behind.

Teachers in the Church who deny the Virgin Birth.

The issue in the Virgin Birth is clear and simple. It is, whether God the Father actually as a father begot Jesus out of Mary; or, whether He was begotten by a human father.

If he were begotten by a human father (as personality comes from the father and not the mother) his personality was finite, not infinite. If He were finite and not infinite He was not God. If He were not God He was not the Second Person of the Trinity. If He were not the Second Person of the Trinity then none is, there is no Trinity. If He were not the Second Person of the Trinity and therefore not God, He could not raise Himself from the dead; but since in Scripture the Trinity, Father Son and Holy Spirit are always seen working together and never apart; as the Father is said to raise the Son, and the Spirit is said to raise the Son, and the Son is said to raise Himself; and as the Father and the Spirit could not raise the Son unless the Son worked as God in concert with them, then as He was not God and could not raise Himself and therefore could not work in concert with them, then the Father did not raise Him, the Spirit did not raise Him, He never was raised from the dead.

Deny the Virgin Birth, the logic of it not only sweeps away the divine Trinity, it shuts Christ up in His grave forever and sweeps Christianity as a revealed faith from God out of the world forever.

No matter how much the teacher may say he believes in the resurrection of Christ, his doctrine belies his profession the moment he denies the Virgin Birth. Without that, on the basis of the Scripture doctrine of the Trinity resurrection is impossible.

Such teachers deny the Lord who bought them and can have no part with Christ when He comes.

Teachers who deny the blood of Christ will be left behind.

Those who deny the redeeming value of the blood of Christ are like Cain, who ignored the moral and judicial distance between himself and God, refused to recognize that the penalty of death was upon him and that his only ground of approach to a holy God was by and through an atoning sacrifice; his only hope of acceptance in offering a substitute to meet the claims of God against him. Like Cain they turn away from the sacrifice, the sacrifice of the cross, offer to God the culture of the flesh, their own good works, their own character, and like Cain are repudiated and rejected of God who insistently and graciously bids them offer the sin-offering which, as in Cain's day "lieth at the door," the crucified Christ, offer Him and be saved. (Gen. 4:7)

In denying the blood these teachers and all who follow their evil way are face to face with the solemn Word of God.

"... without shedding of blood is no remission." (Heb. 9:22)

No! it is blood all the way down from the beginning, blood the only way of hope for lost and sinful man.

Blood there at Eden's gates, the blood of sacrifice, the covering of nakedness with the cover made from the skins of the bleeding victim, blood the only ground on which the guilty pair could turn and face the world and claim the right to live. Blood on Abel's altar making it a better offering than that of Cain. Blood on Abraham's altar on Mount Moriah, the blood of a provided substitute which saved his son. Blood on that passover night in Egypt which saved the people of Israel from the sentence of death against the first born in the land. Blood on the brazen altar and the golden altar and the ark of the covenant in the wilderness. Blood sprinkling the book of the covenant. Blood yonder on the cross, the blood of Him who was the foreordained Lamb of God. All the blood of all the offerings spelling as they spilled, the blood of Christ and out of every crimson drop crying, "... the blood of Jesus Christ his Son cleanseth us from all sin." (1 John 1:7) Blood on the throne of God, turning it from a throne of judgment to a throne of grace. The blood that alone gives right and undisputed title to enter the gates of pearl. Yes! those who deny the blood deny the whole crimson illuminated path from grace to glory, deny the only way of salvation God has revealed to men.

He who denies the blood of Christ proclaims himself outside the blood-sealed covenant of grace and will be left outside the blood-bought and Heaven-provided home.

All unbelievers will be left behind when Christ comes for His Church.

What a fearful separation will take place. The fearfulness of it lies in the fact of its *immanency*.

It might be at any time.

There is nothing between us and that separation but the coming of Christ.

There is nothing between us and that coming but the sound of His trumpet.

Should the trumpet sound the elect of God in Christ would be caught up to meet a coming Lord.

All others would be left behind.

And there is no hope for those who shall be left behind.

They did not care for the truth when they had it.

They ignored it.

Some of them resisted it.

Others mocked and made light of it.

God does not forget.

Since they would not have the truth, He will send them *strong delusion*.

He will allow them to be taken as in a snare. He will allow them to be captivated, seduced and completely caught by the Great Lie that is coming on the earth.

They would not have the *true* Christ.

They shall be caught in the toils of a *false* Christ.

They would not be saved.

He will see to it that they shall all be damned.

Hear what is written in the Holy Book:

“And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe *a lie*:

“That they *all* might be *damned* who believed not the truth, but had pleasure in unrighteousness.” (II Thess. 2:11,12)

He sent the Spirit to convict them of the truth.

They resisted the Spirit of truth.

He will send them the deceiving spirit of untruth.

They will yield to that spirit and accept the lie.

The Holy Spirit would have been their seal unto life eternal.

The Spirit of untruth of open falsehood shall be their seal unto eternal death.

Unbeliever! if Christ came tonight the door of hope and salvation would be shut.

You would be left out.

Separation from all who have believed.

What a separation!

To all I have said there are two corollaries:

1. *Everyone of you who professes the name of Christ should come out and make your calling and election sure.*

That means, find out whether you really believe or whether you have only a name to live and are actually, spiritually dead. Find out whether you are indifferent to the claims of God and Christ.

Find out whether the Christian profession is an irksome or a joyous thing to you.

Arouse! because the time may be short.

Arouse! because a separation will take place between those who are really Christ's and those who have only the profession of His name.

Nothing could be sadder than to be a mere professor when Christ comes.

Nothing can be sadder than to have your name written in the book of the Church down here, and not in the book of life of the Church in Heaven, up there.

Nothing could be sadder, more heart-breaking than to hear Him say—in that hour:

“... I know you not whence ye are; depart from me ...” (Luke 13:27).

2. *It is time that you who make no profession of His name should arouse.*

There is no question, no need to question what would befall you if Christ should come before morning.

If He came and found you as you are, an unbeliever, walking after the flesh and not after the Spirit you would be left behind to certain woe.

Do not trifle with your purchased opportunity.

Grace offers it to you.

Judgment will not return it to you.

Of all follies none is greater than to purchase a cup of eternal woe hereafter for the price of a brimming, but brief cup of pleasure now.

Whatever else hell may be, it is hell, and will be hell, to look back at lost opportunities.

It is hell to have enjoyed the pleasures of sin for a season, and lose the pleasures of heaven forever.

The gulf is not yet fixed.

If Christ should come, then between you and those who are His—the gulf will be fixed forever.

There is no bridge.

It yawns bridgeless forever—a wide—measureless—eternal gulf of separation.

VIII.
THE GREAT TRIBULATION

The Great Tribulation

FOR then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be." (Matt. 24: 21)

In presenting this theme I shall divide it into four simple parts:

1. The Cause of the Great Tribulation.
2. The Character of the Great Tribulation.
3. The Dramatic Ending of the Great Tribulation.
4. The Beginning of the Great Tribulation.

1. *The Cause of the Great Tribulation.*

The cause is threefold:

Moral.

Satanic.

Judicial.

It is moral.

The moral cause is found in the failure of the Gentile nations to fulfill the commission granted to them of God.

God granted this commission in the days of Nebuchadnezzar, king of Babylon.

He granted it to them, because of the failure of the Jews to fulfill the commission He had originally given to them.

He had called the children of Israel to be His peculiar people. He had separated them from all other nations unto Himself. He had by an outstretched arm and mighty power planted them in the land of Palestine. He ordained this land to be the geographical center of the earth and His chosen people to be the political and governmental center. He purposed to send them His own Son to be their incarnate King and through Him and them rule the world in righteousness and peace, bringing blessing and benefaction to every creature.

The nation had utterly failed. Ten tribes had gone into idolatry. The Assyrians came and carried them captives into Adiabene, into the East, and for twenty-five hundred years they have been nationally and historically lost.

The remaining two tribes likewise turned to idolatry. Then Nebuchadnezzar, king of Babylon, besieged Jerusalem, took it and carried the people captive to Babylon, the golden city.

The Lord at once proposed to transfer the rulership of the world officially from the hand of the Jew to the Gentile.

He would put an end to *Jewish time* and bring in *Gentile time*—"The times of the Gentiles." (See Luke 21:24)

He now purposed to rule the world through four successive Gentile world powers.

These powers He indicated in the different materials of the statue or image which Nebuchadnezzar saw in his dream and forgot, and which Daniel, one of the Hebrew captives in Babylon, under the inspiration of God interpreted.

There were four metals in the image:

Gold.

Silver.

Brass.

Iron.

The iron was mixed with brittle, incohesive clay.

The gold set forth Babylon.

Silver—Medo-Persia.

Brass—Greece.

Iron in the two legs the Roman empire under its *first* political division into Western and Eastern Empire.

The iron and clay mixed in the ten toes, the ten-fold confederation or the *second* and final division of the *fourth* or *Roman* empire.

These four empires or kingdoms are corroborated and further illustrated by a vision which later on God gave to Daniel himself in which he saw four wild beasts rise up out of the Mediterranean Sea.

The first was—a *lion*.

The second—a *bear*.

The third—a *leopard*.

The fourth—a *monster with ten horns*.

The *lion* is—*Babylon*.

The *bear*—*Medo-Persia*.

The *leopard*—*Greece*.

The *monster*—*Rome*.

Two of these kingdoms were precised and named in a still later vision given to Daniel.

He saw a ram pushing toward the west.

He saw a he goat rushing to the east to meet him, overthrow him and trample him under foot.

The ram is *Medo-Persia*, the he goat *Greece*, and the symbolic prophecy concerning Greece comes on down to our day.

The Lord warned that this rulership in the hands of the Gentiles would prove a failure as everything which God has ever entrusted to man.

This announced failure is to be seen in the deterioration or descent in the character of the metals as named in their order in the image.

First, gold, then silver, then brass, after that iron, and last of all *clay* which is corrupt, disintegrated stone, is brittle, incohesive, may be *massed* together, but is never united.

Gold sets forth rulership directly from the hand of God and is the symbol and seal of “the divine right of kings.”

The *clay* stands for the *people*, for *man in the mass*.

This may be seen in the statement of Saint Paul:

“Nay but, O man, who art thou that repliest against God? Shall the thing formed say to him that formed it, Why hast thou made me thus?

“Hath not the potter power over the clay, of the same lump to make one vessel unto honour, and another unto dishonour?” (Rom. 9:20,21)

Man as man is here compared to clay.

This is corroborated by the prophet Isaiah.

“But now, O LORD, thou art our father; we are the clay, and thou our potter; and we all are the work of thy

hand.” (Isa. 64:8)

The Lord Himself speaking to Israel says:

“... as the clay is in the potter’s hand, so are ye in mine hand, O house of Israel.” (Jer. 18:6)

Israel is the figure of the natural man, man seen as to *genus*, in the mass, the people.

Clay sets forth the people.

As each material of which the statue is formed indicates distinctive political rule, then the clay symbolizes *rule in the hand of the people*. The Greek word for people is *deemos*, from which we get our word democracy. The *rule of the people, government in the hands of the people*.

Thus the clay in the image is a picture of *democracy*. *Gold* represents *monarchy*, is the first in order in the statue, and sets forth that form of government which is directly from the hand of God—as Daniel says when addressing Nebuchadnezzar:

“Thou, O king, art a king of kings: for *the God of heaven hath given thee a kingdom*, power, and strength, and glory ... *and hath made thee ruler* ...” (Dan. 2:37,38).

The clay is the last form of rule, is the result of the overthrow and departure from the previous forms of monarchy and is the farthest away from the direct ordination of God.

Clay is brittle, easily broken into separate pieces and scattered. It is in itself the symbol of weakness and final failure in government.

It was a prophecy that rulership in the hands of the Gentiles would become successively farther and farther away from God.

This symbolic prophecy has been and is now being fulfilled.

Cyrus at the head of his Persian host came against Babylon and overthrew it.

Babylon failed because Nebuchadnezzar, forgetting he had received his grant of power from the hand of the Most High God, walked about Babylon, and as he looked at its grandeur, at the lifted height of the tower of Belus, the arcaded, marble streets, the hanging gardens and all the wonder and glory of the marvellous city, filled with pride and boastful exaltation said:

“... Is not this great Babylon, that *I have built* for the house of the kingdom by the might of *my power*, and for the honour of *my majesty*?” (Dan. 4:30)

After him his grandson, Belshazzar, gathered his debauched courtiers, his harem of beautiful concubines and holding high revel in the banqueting hall of his palace, drank wine out of the golden vessels taken from the temple of God in Jerusalem, praised the gods of Babylon, praised, debauched and danced at the very hour when Cyrus and his glittering soldiery sweeping in upon the drunken revellers, slew them and took the kingdom.

Greece overthrew Medo-Persia.

Medo-Persia failed because, although God had named and ordained Cyrus before he was born, the kingdom under successive rulers departed as a nation more and more from the will of God.

Then from her seven hills Rome arose and overthrew Greece.

Greece failed because Alexander of Macedon led his Greeks to Babylon, won victory after victory, swept everything before him and forgetting that the hand of God had opened the gates of conquest for him, exalted himself and claimed the place, the honors and the adoration belonging to God. God smote him in a drunken Babylonian orgy, smashed his empire into four great parts, brought Greece back to her original boundaries; and it was this Greece, crushed and limited that Rome overthrew.

In fulfillment of the symbolic forecast of the two legs of iron Rome was divided into Western and Eastern Empire.

The Western Empire came to an end in the fifth century.

It began with a Romulus and ended with a Romulus. It lasted about twelve hundred years.

The Eastern Empire came to an end in 1453, when the Turks defeated John Palæologus and took Constantinople. The empire had lasted a thousand years.

The nations occupying the territory of these four original kingdoms have been erected out of them or built upon their ruins.

All these nations, with the exception of the Turkish Empire, are, so-called, Christian nations.

Only one of these so-called Christian nations is Protestant; all the others are officially Catholic.

The history of these professed Christian nations has been a history of intrigue, diplomatic gambling, chicanery, fraud, war, conflict and confusion, tyranny, oppression, revolution and despotism.

Today all the nations within the limit of the once Roman Empire are engaged in the bloodiest and most wanton of all wars. Millions of lives are being sacrificed in battle, in hospital, in sickness and disease. Treasure is poured out like flowing streams. All the standards of civilization are broken down and trampled in the mire of blood.

We have now reached the stage of the clay—*democracy*; or, if you like, republicanism—*the rule of the people*.

The rule of the people, democracy, is, practically, universal. England is more democratic than the United States. George the Fifth, king of England, is nothing more than a figure-head, whose word, thought, advice, wish or suggestion, count for nothing. He is a negligible quantity. He has no influence in legislating a law, shaping a policy or moulding a campaign. All the insignia of royalty and the baubles of rank and power are in final terms, meaningless.

France is a republic built upon a decapitated monarchy.

Spain has a king, but the present dynasty is the result of a revolution, the people are waiting the opportunity to overturn the kingdom and like Portugal set up the rule of democracy.

Italy, like England, is a monarchy only in name. Legislation is in the hand of a democratic parliament.

If incohesion, revolution and lack of unity constitute some of the elements and characteristics of democracy, then Greece is democratic.

The Balkans in their increasing conflict, riot, confusion and rebellion bear witness both to the rule and misrule of the people.

Before the war the Socialists in the Reichstag of Germany were the emphasized and aggressive minority which put a check upon and gave warning to the monarchy. The war has simply dammed up the spirit of revolution and unrest, in the meantime gathering force and determination to break, sooner or later, over all bounds.

From the days of Nebuchadnezzar until this day human government in the hands of the Gentiles has been a costly failure.

It is not necessary to speak of Nebuchadnezzar nor the debauchery of a Belshazzar. It is not necessary to speak of Rome, of the Twelve Cæsars, of emperors elected by Prætorian guards or made such by an assassin's knife or a poisoner's cup. Come down to the days nearer our own time.

Read the story of England. The conflicts and the wars. Read the record of the War of the Roses, where professedly for the sake of a white or a red rose men cut each other's throat and soaked the land in blood, but fought actually that the few might live at the expense of the many. Read the story of the Four Georges as described by the incomparable pen and the keen satire of a Thackeray.

Look at France in the zenith of her glory under a Louis Fourteenth, *le roi soleil*, the sun king. Look at that palace at Versailles, built in the place of a swamp, the foundation alone costing so much that it bankrupted the nation. Go through the palace where titled women felt it their highest privilege to yield to the demands and pleasures of a king's unbridled sensualism. Go through the palace and read the things scribbled on wall and door by a lecherous monarch; go out into the green park, into the Grand and Little Trianon; observe the traps, the secret doors, the sliding panels, the tempting boudoirs; read the story of the reign of Louis the Sixteenth, the man who was more successful as a locksmith than a monarch; go down to the little Swiss village built for a queen that she might play the part of a beautiful milk-maid; watch her surrounded by her court of light and easy virtue beauties, the crowd of polite and profligate princes as they laugh and jest and say, "After us the deluge"; while over the hedge row there the gamins from the streets of Paris, the bag and hatchet women, the women from Saint Antoine and the markets are crying, "bread, bread, give us bread."

Go behind the cabinet doors of the nations now engaged in war. See the treaties torn to shreds as of no more value than so much "white paper," listen to the intrigue, the kingly and ministerial lying that caused the swords to leap from scabbards and the shells to echo from the cannon's mouth.

The Gentile governments have failed to glorify God and establish righteousness. They have been unable to maintain peace except at intervals and then only by the sharpness of the sword. They have failed to produce the greatest good to the greatest number. They have made the rich to grow richer and the poor, poorer. They have filled the earth not only with tyranny and oppression, riot, revolution, rebellion, war and confusion, but, led men to repudiate God and cry out against His rule as well as the rule of tyrants and oppressors, the conquerors and despots who claimed authority in His name.

This utter and moral failure on the part of the Gentile nations and particularly so on the part of the so-called Christian nations is one of the contributing causes which will bring on the Great Tribulation.

The second cause is Satanic.

God created a great angel, the Chief of the Cherubim.

He was perfect, beautiful.

He was Lucifer, son of the morning.

He became lifted up with pride at his own beauty, wisdom and power. He was unwilling to be a subordinate. He would rule himself. He and his angels rebelled. God overthrew them.

The Devil tempted man with the same ambition which caused his own fall.

He offered him role and rulership as God of this world, but, in partnership with himself.

He led man to turn his back on God.

Man became the Devil's incarnation, his dupe and slave.

The Devil led him into false religions, into idolatry and infidelic philosophies. He it is who has been behind the governments of the world, behind the thrones of emperors and the chairs of presidents; behind intrigue, diplomacy and war.

Two thousand years ago God sent His Son into the world as the *new*, the *second* and the *last man*.

The Devil *attempted* to tempt Him as he did the first man. He offered Him the rulership of the world in partnership with himself on condition that He would own him as supreme, then he would use all his power to make Him the outward and manifested God of this world. As he had destroyed the relation between God and the first man he would now invalidate the incarnation by making the humanity of Christ the medium for his own manifestation and visibility in the flesh.

He failed.

The Son of God was crucified as a sacrifice for sin, rose, ascended to heaven and took His seat upon the infinite throne as the giver of new and eternal life to men. He began the creation of His Church as His spiritual Body on the earth.

The Devil at once sought to tempt the Church and render it inert. He offered it the same old temptation he had offered to the Son of God—*the rulership of the world*.

The Church yielded to the temptation.

It repudiated the attitude of separation from and pilgrimage through the world. It became a Church of State, supported by the governments of earth and identified with them.

For centuries the Roman Church ruled the world till the very mention of her name caused even kings to tremble. She so ruled and terrorized, tortured and slew all opposed to her; so filled her pathway with the blood of martyrs, shut out light and truth; so brought in spiritual ignorance, ecclesiastical superstition and idolatry, that the epoch of her unhindered domination is known as "*the dark ages*."

Some four hundred years ago the Reformation broke out and on the waves of its protest Rome for a while was tossed and swept downward to the Mediterranean. The Protestant Church went forth with the rallying cry of "The world's conversion," and the spiritual conquest of it through the Gospel, and—failed. Today, the professing Church (the Protestant) is seeking to make an alliance with world thought and world culture, concedes to the modern idea of socialistic redemption, yields to the so-called "higher" criticism of its Bible and theology and does so that it may get a more influential grasp upon the world itself and fulfill its now inhering ambition for rulership.

By this Satanic suggestion of world empire has the professing Church been deceived, so blinded and hindered

that it has lost sight of the original ministry committed to it and the place it should occupy till the Lord returns.

But, in the professing Church the Lord has His elect, those who constitute the real body of Christ and through the operation of the Spirit dwelling in them Satan has been checked and restrained.

Since the incarnation of God's Son, however, the supreme ambition of the Devil has been to match it with the incarnation of himself. He seeks to find a man in whom he may enthrone himself with all the marvel and miracle of the Christ and through him become the unique and indisputable god of the world.

He knows his doom. He knows God will permit him to find his man and for a season through him deceive the sons of men and reign in the midst of their welcoming applause as very god incarnate.

He knows his time is short, and as the age draws to a close and the hour of consummation comes on, he will unloose all the bonds of wickedness, stir up all hindering forces of unrighteousness, unbelief, infidelity and lawlessness and prepare the way for his anticipated and long coveted moment of subtle, yet spectacular triumph.

There are two immense movements of thought which may well inspire every thinker to stand upon the alert.

On the one side there is the constantly growing effort to deny and entirely repudiate the doctrine of the deity of Christ. You will hear and read eulogium after eulogium of His manhood and the exceeding greatness and marvel of that manhood; but, the slightest analysis will show that this exaltation of His human character is a blind behind which His enemies are seeking to undermine His essential standing and relationship as God of God and very God of very God.

This setting aside of the plain scriptural statement that the fulness of the deity dwelleth in Him bodily comes not only from open infidels, from those who refuse to accept the Bible as a revelation from God, but from those inside the Church, from those who profess to be ministers and teachers of Christ; men who have been graduated from our theological institutions; who enter our pulpits and talk mouthingly of the sweetness and beauty of Christ; who dwell upon His moral grandeur, His moral sacrifice, His devotedness of self in the interests of others; men who pass lightly over His birth, who find in it no greater miracle than that which occurs in the wonderful birth of every child; who find His miracles only in His deeds of kindness, in the purity of His every day life; who talk of His death as a martyrdom due to the ignorance and intrigue of men; who talk of His resurrection simply as the passing on of a deathless spirit and the rising up on account of the unselfish character of His death, of the truth and strength of the larger and more advanced humanity He came to represent. These men speak so much of Christ on earth that little thought is awarded Him as a living person in heaven.

The skill and subtlety with which these teachers denude the Son of God of His deity, His divine attributes are so great, so thoroughly "modern" and "progressive," that insensibly Christ comes to be regarded rather as a living principle and is no longer thought of and worshipped as the mighty God, "Maker of heaven and earth," and the final personal and visible judge of all mankind.

On the other hand, everywhere there is the exaltation of man. The great things he has done and is doing are catalogued and continually repeated. He bridges gulfs. He tunnels mountains. He sails the sea, on the sea and under the sea. He can talk without wires and send his message round the earth in a quick and girdling flash. He can fly up into the heavens with machines that are heavier than air and hopes some day (and secretly believes it) in spite of atmospheric pressure to cross the threshold of other worlds. Winds and waves obey him. He has harnessed nature's forces. Because of his multiplied and amazing triumph the question is increasingly repeated:

"What will not man do next?"

Everywhere man is being exalted into the realm of deity. In proportion as the deity of Christ is openly denied, the deity of man is persistently suggested.

If I were to stand before an audience of the world and affirm that Jesus of Nazareth was God manifest in the flesh; that He it was who before His incarnation created all things; that He is even now the great God who upholdeth all things by the word of His power (See Heb. 1:3), there might be a few who would not be startled; but, the great majority would give no sign of acceptance or approval; should I, however, stand before the same audience and suggest that man might yet show himself to be divine, to have in himself resident deific powers that would eventually make him as very god in this world, there would be an almost instant acceptance of the proposition and generous applause.

And when you look yonder at Saint Peter's in Rome on a feast day, see the vast building filled with thousands of

people; and when the pope is brought in on the shoulders of “the noble guard,” the people falling down, prostrating themselves and calling him “Holy Father,” “Our Lord God, the Pope”; when women in this country kneel before a “swami” from India, kiss his not over clean feet and beg the privilege of touching but the hem of his garment in the belief that some deific and harmonious wave will be distilled and undulate within their wide open and receptive souls; when thousands of the baser sort will pack the streets of a city to see a victorious prize fighter, some superior bruiser of his fellow man and give him an ovation; when, in short, the spirit of hero worship seemingly innate in man waits only an opportunity to express itself sometimes in a delirium of surrender to the idol of the hour it is not difficult to see how, should some man arrive with occult powers, doing great signs and wonders, proving himself the master of nature’s laws, it is not difficult to see how such an one might be owned and worshipped by the impressionable multitude as very god.

The way is being prepared for Satan’s man and Satan’s exaltation through him as the god of the world.

The third cause which will bring on the Great Tribulation is—

Judicial.

It will be the judicial action of God.

God judges and punishes nations as He judges and punishes individuals.

Just as He smote Israel and Babylon, Medo-Persia, Greece and Rome, so will He smite the nations of the earth today. He has a controversy with them and, specially, with those nations which calls themselves, “Christian.”

He will allow evil to multiply and head itself up in all its hideousness. He will take off restraint that iniquity may reveal itself. He will allow it to grow bold, aggressive and defiant. He will take the wickedness of man, violence, the sword, famine and pestilence, all the logical consequences of sin, of disobedience to His will and law. He will take all these forces and make use of them as His scourge, as “the rod of His anger.” (See Prov. 22:8)

It is worse than folly to attempt to apologize for God or eliminate Him from relationship to the forces of unrighteousness, of moral and physical destruction in the world. He Himself distinctly says:

“And I will send the sword, the famine, and the pestilence, among them, till they be consumed from off the land that I gave unto them and to their fathers.” (Jer. 24:10)

“And I will persecute them with the sword, with the famine, and with the pestilence . . .” (Jer. 29:18).

“For I will punish them that dwell in the land of Egypt, as I have punished Jerusalem, by the sword, by the famine, and by the pestilence.” (Jer. 44:13).

“So will I send upon you famine and evil beasts, and they shall bereave thee; and pestilence and blood shall pass through thee; and I will bring the sword upon thee. I the LORD have spoken it.” (Ezek. 5:17).

“The sword is without, and the pestilence and the famine within: he that is in the field shall die with the sword; and he that is in the city, famine and pestilence shall devour him.” (Ezek. 7:15).

“Or if I send a pestilence into that land, and pour out my fury upon it in blood, to cut off from it man and beast:” (Ezek. 14:19).

“I have sent among you the pestilence after the manner of Egypt: your young men have I slain with the sword . . .” (Amos 4:10).

He makes use of one nation to punish another.

“For thus saith the Lord GOD; Behold, I will bring upon Tyrus Nebuchadrezzar king of Babylon, a king of kings, from the north, with horses, and with chariots, and with horsemen, and companies, and much people.

“He shall slay with the sword thy daughters in the field . . .” (Ezek. 26:7,8)

Thus the threefold cause of the coming Great Tribulation will be moral, Satanic and judicial. The moral failure of the nations in the grant of power given to them, the activity of Satan looking and moving toward his pseudo incarnation in humanity and the judgment of God, using these things as the whips and the scourges with which to smite the unrighteousness of man.

II. The Character of the Great Tribulation.

There will be world-wide war.

The battle line will be flung round the far circumference of the earth. There will not be a spot on the globe

where the tramp of armed men shall not be heard and the roar of conflict filling the air. It will not be the battle of mere armies, forays and predatory expeditions, but the rush of nation against nation and race against race. The whole earth shall be filled with violence.

Lawlessness shall be multiplied, not only the lawlessness that shall violate all national and international pledges and look upon a treaty as of no more value than a "scrap" of paper, but lawlessness in social and individual life, the breaking down and throwing to the winds of old standards. The people will be in a state of revolt, not only against kings and rulers, but against conditions. They will rush like the rushing of the seas, unrest, tumult and turmoil will sweep like tidal waves bursting over all distinctions between rich and poor, capital and labor. The rich will become the prey of the mob and accumulated wealth in the hands of the few will be seized and scattered like grains of sand; as it is written:

"Go to now, ye rich men, weep and howl for your miseries that shall come upon you.

"Your riches are corrupted, and your garments are moth-eaten.

"Your gold and silver is cankered; and the rust of them shall be a witness against you, and shall eat your flesh as it were fire. Ye have heaped treasure together for the last days." (James 5:1-3)

There shall be distress of nations. We are told that women shall enter into rule and because of the scarcity of men women shall seek after them and desire them. "And in that day seven women shall take hold of one man, saying, We will eat our own bread, and wear our own apparel: only let us be called by thy name, to take away our reproach" (Isa. 4:1); then shall there be a time of manners and customs in which the license of the days of the Directory shall seem in comparison as virtue itself.

Famine shall be abroad, not local famine, but world-wide, gaunt faces and starving multitudes. Everywhere the cry for bread, young and old dying for want of food.

Green-eyed pestilence will walk hand in hand with famine, the pestilence that will rise ghoul-like from the unburied dead of battle, the poison floating through the air, speeding on its way at midnight and wasting at noonday.

Out of this famine and pestilence vice and crime as twin terrors shall be born and clutch the throats of righteousness and truth.

As a consequence of war there will be a revolt of revolts.

People will refuse any longer to be led like beasts to the slaughter. They shall ask themselves, "Why should we fight or die like senseless brutes for kings, for the sake of a name, a dynasty, a throne?"

There will be a smash up politically in all directions. Cabinets will fall, kings and rulers will be set aside. The people will seize the powers of government; but they will soon discover that democracy left to itself is no better than brittle, breakable clay, incapable of cohesion, without inhering strength, susceptible of being massed, but not unified, massed and compacted and held together only by a weight and pressure exterior to itself; for the immense truth is, the strength of democracy is its weakness. Its strength is individualism, the protest of personalism against the limitation of personalism; but the moment one or more individuals begin to combine to secure increased strength in governmental administration then individualism revolts against the combination as a menace to personalism, a limitation of its freedom. In the nature of the case therefore, there must always be an inner spirit of revolt in democracy; always democracy must be on the point of giving birth to a revolution. Revolution is and must be the chronic outcome of democracy. There can be no finality, no fixity in personalism. It must always be developing, "progressing," seeking wider freedom for itself. Necessarily therefore, there can be no final fixity or form in essential democracy, it must be always on the threshold of change, of overthrow of existing things.

But back of every other element in human nature is the law of self defence. Sooner or later this law operates in democracy and in proportion as there is suffering from the anarchical tendency inherent in it, there is an instinctive, involuntary outreach and swing over to centrality, the demand for a strong hand to control. The self interest of personalism produces this final demand for concentrated power to save it from atomic attrition, the lawless independence of one personalism with another.

Such a condition of things will cause the revolting people to seek for "iron" men, with "iron" hands who can rally the elements of law and order and under the pressure of external power bring in the cohesion required for security. The people therefore will elect for themselves, soldiers, conquerors, men who can control the mob.

As a consequence of this surge and resurge and the constant changing of the map ten democratic kingdoms will be erected within the territory once occupied by the Western and Eastern Empire of Rome, the territory once covered successively by Babylon, Medo-Persia, Greece and Rome.

Four of these kings or kingdoms we know. They will be the four into which the empire of Alexander was divided and which Scripture assures us will be revived in the closing hours of this age. These four are the kingdoms of Selucis, which included Syria, all east of the Taurus mountains, Babylon and Persia; the kingdom of Ptolemy which took in Egypt; the kingdom of Cassander, that is, Greece and Macedonia; and the kingdom of Lysimachus, covering Romania, all the country to Constantinople and east to the Taurus. Egypt and Greece have already been revived, and whatever the course of the present war, and in spite of the senseless, dilatory and fumbling tactics of the Allies, *Greece will yet have Macedonia*. The war in the Balkans is preparatory to the setting up once more but in more westward detail the kingdom of Lysimachus. The onrush to Baghdad and the East will again put Babylon and the Euphratean valley on the map for daily study.

Then will arise the Devil's man, the man whom God has ordained shall be the Devil's long sought for incarnation and through whom he will make his final and desperate effort to capture and rule the world for himself.

This man will be thrown up by the red waves of war.

He will come out of the East as a soldier of reputation, a conqueror. He will sweep everything before him. His course will be westward. He will be hailed with enthusiasm as the only man who can lay hold of the troublous and turbulent times and bring order out of chaos. The kings in convocation will elect him as their head and superior. He will take the title, "*Prince of Rome*," and thus the old Roman Empire, the fourth great world power, will be revived under its last form as a *tenfold kingdom*, a confederation of kings over which this prince shall rule king of kings and lord of lords.

Already the promise of these things is in the air.

The present Kaiser of Germany has said should he win he will restore the old Teutonic, Roman Empire with such glory as it never dreamed in its most resplendent days. With his sword he has said he will hew his way to Babylon, and from Hamburg to the Persian Gulf, from the English channel to the Dardanelles he will rule with the sceptre and the cross of iron.

This prince who is to come will triumph over all who set themselves in array against him, till on every lip shall be the cry:

"Who can make war with him?" (See Rev. 13:4)

Having overcome all enemies he will seek to establish peace. He aims to be known as the "Prince of Peace."

He will enter into league with the Pope and make the Roman Church a church of state.

In order to secure his eastern possessions and defend Babylon; (Babylon will again be built. It is as the ruler and king of revived Babylon he will enter on his role as conqueror and march to the West); in order to secure the East from Russia and the confederacy of Asiatic nations of which she will be the center and to form a barrier against the combined movement of Germany and Russia to Constantinople and Palestine, he will set up the Jewish state. By means of the navy of one of the western kingdoms he will enable the Jews in the uttermost parts of the earth to return to their own land. With the head of the Jewish state he will make a treaty of seven years. The Jews will hail him as a political Messiah; and since he will be a Jew many will be ready to receive him as actual Messiah. Having rejected the true Messiah when He came in His Father's name they will accept the false Messiah when he comes in his own name. He will rebuild their temple and accord to them their ancient rites and ceremonies.

For three years and a half a deceived world will be lulled with the dream of peace.

At the end of that time the prince will turn like a madman upon the Church in Rome and in concert with his kings overthrow it and hurl it from its place of privilege and power. With increasing madness he will turn upon the Jews, break his treaty with them and rage against them with a wickedness, a terror and brutality of persecution such as they have never known in all the anguish of their history.

It will be the hour of the Great Tribulation. For the sake of the elect among the Jews the Lord God will now send hardening judgments on this wild beast, king and kaiser, even as He did for the sake of Israel upon Pharaoh and Egypt.

He will rain upon the nations hail and horrible tempest. From the eighth chapter of the Revelation to the nineteenth you have a record and picture of those judgments in which every word that records them seems to be written in brimstone and sulphur.

Those of you who were in the northwest some years ago can remember how because of the drought and the all enveloping heat, fire leaped out of the very air to consume everything before it. The very trees became so dry the moisture was so completely evaporated that in rubbing their branches together they emitted sparks that ignited the wilted and crisp leaves till whole forests were ablaze, each several tree like a hideous burning torch, or in the deep darkness of the night like an upright serpent flinging forth its forked tongue.

The grass and the harvest will be burned up.

The waters will be turned to the appearance of blood. The springs and fountains and rivers of water will become bitter as wormwood and gall. All living things will die therein.

The sun and moon and stars will fail to give their full and perfect light. The stars shall fall as when a tree casts its untimely fruit. The unbolted heavens shall be torn apart. The fountains of the deep shall be broken up. Tidal waves shall drown the land. Earthquakes shall rive the solid ground. Volcanoes shall vomit forth their fiery streams. Hail stones weighing hundreds of pounds shall fall until it would seem as though giants of wrath stationed on the borders of heaven were storming the inhabitants of the earth to send them bruised and mangled to their painful death.

There will be an invasion of lost spirits.

There was a time when men believed in spirits, in sprites, in denizens of an unseen world. Then men (as they thought) grew wiser. They believed henceforth only in what they could see or feel, in nothing beyond the length of their eyelashes or the tips of their fingers. Today there is a revivment, a coming back. Men now talk of the sub-conscious mind, of telepathy, hypnotism, levitation and spiritism, communication with the dead. One of the leading scientists of the world has published a book being read by thousands in which, seriously, he details his communications with the dead. The followers of spiritism are to be numbered by millions and there are representative thinkers and students, men of large attainment and scholarship, who do not hesitate to believe in demons, in disembodied souls seeking in this, our day, to interpenetrate and possess the bodies of the living.

Of all the anguish in the universe nothing is so great as the anguish of disembodiment. The Christian soul does not suffer in disembodiment because that soul both by regeneration and the Holy Spirit is linked up to the body of a risen Christ, and Christ for the time being is the housing of that soul in heaven; but to the soul out of Christ, it is unspeakable agony.

The proof of this is to be seen in the interview of our Lord Jesus Christ with the demon-possessed man of Gadara. The man cried out, "I beseech thee, torment me not." (Luke 8:28)

Luke, who gives the account, says this appeal was made because the Lord "... *had commanded the unclean spirit to come out of the man.*" (Luke 8:29) It was a protest of the demon against disembodiment. This is further proved when the Lord asks the man his name. He answers, "... Legion: because many devils were entered into him." (Luke 8:30) As soon as the command was insisted upon the demons besought that they might not be sent into the *deep*. The word used for "deep," signifies, *not the waters of the lake* (immaterial spirits could not be afraid of drowning) but *hades*, the unseen abode of disembodied, unrighteous souls. They cried out against going back to the abode of the disembodied. They plead for embodiment. They asked the Lord to let them go into the bodies of the swine feeding by the lake. Embodiment in beasts was better than being a naked soul. To the Christless soul disembodiment is hell. The one aim of such a soul is to get embodiment. This is proved and demonstrated in the story related by Matthew, of the unclean spirit that went out of a man, went back to the underworld, walked through it, *could find no rest*, then took seven other spirits more wicked than himself and returning with them, entered again into the man. (See Matt. 12:43-45)

Disembodiment is torment, embodiment the yearning desire of the lost.

The Lord will permit the doors of the unseen abode to be flung wide open, and these lost spirits will come forth in monstrous hordes to possess and torment the bodies of men. Men shall seek for death, but will not be able to find it. For a season God will surrender the world to these lost spirits.

It will be a time of terror and anguish.

Everywhere there shall be heart failure, men's hearts failing them for fear, for looking after the things that are coming on the earth.

But as in the days of Pharaoh instead of softening, the plagues and judgments will only serve to harden the hearts of men. Wickedness will increase, murder, fornication, robberies, thefts, conspiracies of sin, of shame, of unbridled iniquity will fill the earth.

The Devil's man shall be completely possessed by him and do according to his Satanic will.

Then will be reached the blasphemous climax.

This Devil's man at the head of a chosen army will march to the East, to meet another army threatening him from the Euphrates: kings and armies from the "sunrise" land, "sunrise" kings and their people. He will halt and form his army at the plain of Esdraelon or Armageddon.

Here he will be reinforced; for Armageddon is the "gathering" place of his final strength. From Armageddon he will turn more southward and march swiftly upon Jerusalem, besiege it, take it, put it through all the horrors of a city given up to lawless soldiery. He will set up his image as Roman emperor. He will seat himself in the temple and demand the tribute and payment of divine honors.

He will proclaim himself as very God.

His prime minister, an incarnate demon, a master of occult science, a very wizard with natural and supernatural forces will cause fire to come down from the heavens at his command. He will make the image of the emperor to speak as with the breath of a living man. All who refuse to do homage to the image shall be put to death. It will be a time of woe and suffering no tongue nor pen can describe. No one shall dare to buy or sell unless he is wearing on his forehead or his right hand, the mark or stamp of the Devil's man.

Such lying signs and wonders will this prime minister of the king perform, and so completely will he proclaim these miracles as due to the power of the king, so insistently will he exalt him as God of gods and show him forth as such, that the very elect are in peril of being deceived.

It is the hour when the Devil will seem to have triumphed; when all the world is at last at his feet; when he reigns supreme and without dispute.

It is the hour for which he has longed and wrought.

Such are some of the *characteristics* of the Great Tribulation coming on the earth.

III. *The Dramatic Ending of the Great Tribulation.*

It will end by the Coming of our Lord Jesus Christ in glory.

He will come with ten thousand times ten thousands of His saints.

Again and again I have described that Coming.

I have no more vocabulary.

I have exhausted speech.

He will come to the Mount of Olives.

It is impossible not to recall that last night when He went into the garden there.

He had come out from the Paschal Supper. With His heavy-hearted disciples He went through the streets of the almost deserted city, crossed the brook Kedron and went up the slopes of the Mount to the garden entrance. He bade Peter and James and John remain at the gate and watch while He went farther in amid the leafy solitude to pray. The moonlight fell in silently soft and silver waves amid the shadows and broke like shafts of splintered light against the trunks of gnarled and century-old trees. The silence was broken only by the voice of His prayer and the distant murmur of the brook as it babbled on its tortuous and rocky way to the solemn and prophetic vale below.

Out of the night and the silence comes His pleading prayer:

"... O my Father, if it be possible, let this cup pass from me: nevertheless *not as I will, but as thou wilt.*" (Matt. 26:39)

Think of His agony!

Think of His cup!

Think of what He saw in that cup! A world's sin, a world's iniquities. The hiding of the Father's face, Himself made sin, treated and punished as sin, as the criminal of the universe. The enduring of God's wrath in your place and mine. Think of it!

Why try to think of it? You cannot imagine it. You cannot picture it. It meant hell as only those will know and experience it who refuse to own Him now.

He shrank from it. His soul's purity and holiness revolted at the stain and horror of it. The horror even of *imputed sin*.

He had a right to refuse to drink this cup.

He had right to refuse if He considered only Himself, only His own will.

Had He considered Himself and exercised His own will, He would have failed the Father, He would have failed you and me.

Then, alas, we would have known by actual experience what was in that cup.

But He did not come to do His own will.

That rails Him off from all others.

That proves His humanity to be of different stuff from ours.

That demonstrates His being and nature to be *more* than human.

He comes to do the will of God the Father.

That proves Him and the Father to be of one mind.

It proves Him to be the Son of God and God the Son, the world's divine and consecrated Redeemer.

It was a night of nights, that last night on Olivet.

But it will not be night on Olivet when He comes again.

All the suns and systems like flaming glories will flash their concentrated splendor before Him and pale and fade away in the effulgence of His own unrestricted majesty. The moment His feet touch the mount it will split in twain and roll a wide uplifted plain for the feet of His saints.

Then will He take this false king and his false prophet and bid them be cast into the valley of Hinnom. It will open like a gulf and into the upleaping fire they will be cast alive. Thus will end the Great Tribulation. As it ends the Lord as King of kings, as Potentate Supreme shall stand upon the threshold of that glorious kingdom unrolling a thousand golden years.

IV. The Beginning of the Great Tribulation.

The beginning, not of the actual Tribulation itself, but of the epoch in which it runs its course has three distinct steps.

1. The Holy Ghost will be taken out of the world as the convicting and restraining power of evil.

For one hundred and twenty years during the ministry of Noah the Spirit strove with men and held back the evil of the world. For two thousand years during this age of grace the spirit has been striving to lead men to faith in the Son of God, seeking to convict them of the sin of unbelief and using His infinite power to hold back and restrain iniquity.

The only thing that keeps New York tonight from utter riot and brutal lawlessness is the presence of the Holy Spirit, not only as an indwelling presence in the true Church of Christ, but as the energy which resists and breaks the combination of evil forces, expanded evil suggestions and evil men.

The Holy Spirit will be taken away.

That is to say, He will personally depart as an official and restraining power.

The world will be given over to the unhindered working of the Satanic spirit.

But, the Holy Ghost dwells officially and personally in the regenerated Church. He came to dwell in the Church corporately and individually as a seal, sealing believers unto the day of redemption; until the hour when the dead

in Christ shall be raised and the living changed. He is committed to remain the indwelling and guiding presence till the Lord comes into the air for the Church.

In the nature of the case He cannot be taken away or separated from His official and essential relationship to the Church. Since He cannot be separated from the Church, the taking away of the Spirit means the taking away, the translation of the Church. As the translation of the Church is at the Coming of the Lord, then at the Coming of the Lord for the Church the Holy Spirit will be taken away.

That the Holy Spirit, as the restraining power of evil is to be taken out of the world at the close of the Church age is the plain teaching of Holy Scripture.

The Apostle Paul says the Antichrist cannot be revealed till "... he who now letteth will let, until he be taken out of the way." (II Thess. 2:7) There is only one power can hinder and restrain Antichrist who is the culmination of evil, because that power is the only one that can restrain and hinder the development of evil which culminates in Antichrist, and that is the Holy Spirit. Antichrist is the beginning of the Tribulation, the Tribulation cannot begin till the Church is taken out of the way. This is the direct promise of the risen Lord Himself. He says to the regenerated Church in this time: "I also will keep thee from (*out of*) the hour of temptation (trial, affliction, tribulation), which shall come upon all the world, to try them that dwell upon the earth." (Rev. 3:10) As the Tribulation cannot come till Antichrist is revealed and the Church is to be taken out of the way of the Tribulation, then Antichrist cannot be revealed till the Church is taken out of the way; as the Church and the Holy Spirit can not be separated then Antichrist cannot be revealed till the Holy Spirit is taken; and as the Holy Spirit is the alone restraining power of evil which culminates in Antichrist, then the Holy Spirit it is of whom the Apostle speaks when he says, "... he who now letteth (hindereth) will let (hinder), until he be taken out of the way." (II Thess. 2:7)

Scripture therefore teaches that when the Lord comes into the air for His Church the Holy Spirit as the restraining power of evil will be taken out of the world.

The Tribulation *epoch* will thus begin by the secret and Sudden Coming of the Lord for His Church and the removal of the Holy Spirit.

2. The Devil's man, the great and final Kaiser will make a covenant with the Jews in Palestine for seven years.

Daniel tells us the "... prince that shall come. ." will "... confirm a covenant with many for one week. ." (Dan. 9:26,27) The word "week" here used is the Hebrew for a period of seven. The context shows the period to be one of years. The week means a period of seven years.

As already stated the Jews will receive this "prince" as their political Messiah; others, because of his claims and apparent miracles as the actual Messiah.

It is this action of the Jews in relation to the Prince that shall bring the judgments of God upon them nationally; and it is this action of the Prince as the head of the Gentile nations that shall bring the judgments of God upon them, driving them forward as agents to the blasphemous climax of the imitation king of kings.

3. At the end of three years and a half, spoken of in Scripture as "... a time, times and an half. ." (Dan. 12:7) as "forty-two months" (lunar months) and as "twelve hundred and sixty days," the King will break his treaty with the Jews.

This will be the actual beginning of the Tribulation.

It will last for three years and a half.

For three years and a half it will be hell on earth.

It will fulfil the solemn and prophetic words of the Son of God.

"For then shall be *great tribulation*, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be." (Matt. 24:21)

The Coming of the Lord into the air *for* the Church might be at any moment.

That coming will be the sounding of the "*last trump*" of Corinthians (I Cor. 15:52), and the "*trump of God*" of Thessalonians (I Thess. 4:16).

There is not the thickness of the thin vapor that rises above the morning hills between us and the sounding of the trump.

Any moment we may be gone and the prelude to the Tribulation begin.

Because we are thus always on the threshold of the Tribulation I have three things to say to you:

1. *It is an absolute crime to go out and deceive people with the talk about peace; to tell them there will be no conflict between capital and labor; that nation will not war against nation; that through the preaching of the Gospel and the evolution of national and social righteousness peace, wide, universal and abiding peace, is coming.*

Again and again we hear the familiar quotation about swords beaten into ploughshares and spears into pruning hooks; but no one seems to realize that the prophet Joel tells us *before that time can come the ploughshares must be beaten into swords and the pruning hooks into spears.* (See Joel 3:10)

In other words war, war universal, war engaging and devastating all nations must come before peace; that the only threshold over which the nations can cross into peace is war—war, bloody, fearful, full of slaughter and anguish. Hear what the prophet says:

“Proclaim ye this among the *Gentiles*; *Prepare war, wake up the mighty men*, let all the men of war draw near; let them come up:

“Beat your plowshares into swords, and your pruninghooks into spears: let the weak say, I am strong.” (Joel 3:9,10)

Hear what Jeremiah says:

“And the slain of the LORD shall be at that day from one end of the earth even unto the other end of the earth: they shall not be lamented, neither gathered, nor buried; they shall be dung upon the ground.” (Jer. 25:33)

Hear what the Son of God says in that last address upon the Mount of Olives:

“And ye shall hear of wars and rumours of wars. . . For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom. . .” (Matt. 24:6,7)

Hear what Paul says:

“For when they shall say, Peace and safety; then sudden destruction cometh upon them, as travail upon a woman with child; and they shall not escape.” (1 Thess. 5:3)

Hear what James says:

“Go to now, ye rich men, weep and howl for your miseries that shall come upon you. . . Ye have *heaped treasure together for the last days.*” (James 5:1,3)

Hear what John says:

He says, in the closing hours of this age, wicked spirits will “. . . go forth unto the kings of the earth and of *the whole world*, to gather them to the battle of that great day of God Almighty.” (Rev. 16:14)

Hear *again* what the Son of God says. He says:

There shall come Tribulation such as the world never saw, distress with perplexity of nations, famine (world-wide famine), pestilence, earthquake, the going forth of false Christs, the multiplication of lawlessness, the falling away from God, the utter apostasy from righteousness, every man’s heart failing him for fear—fear everywhere—at home and abroad, in the family and in the mart, in the palace and the cot, in the town and in the hamlet—fear, fear for looking after the things that are coming on the earth; war, confusion, conflict, Satanic triumph, *peace utterly taken from the earth.* (See Matt. 24:21-19; Mark 13:9-31; Luke 21:10-28)

Talk about peace in the face of all this warning!

Talk about any legislation, any movement, any organized effort on the part of men to set up a peace which shall deny and make void these solemn warnings!

To so talk and so preach is to deceive the people.

There are three classes who are talking about peace: Men who utterly ignore the fact that the basic force in man, his capital, his asset, is self-interest, self will.

Take self-interest out of men and you will stop every wheel and every machine in every manufactory on Manhattan island today. Self-interest, self-consciousness, the consciousness of self’s power and the determination to put the individual self first and to the front is the inspiration in man for all his achievements. Not until men are absolutely and universally regenerated, made all over, filled and crowned with the love of God and the unselfishness of God’s Christ, made into a new and distinct race, can the law of self and self’s interest be set aside. And till it is, the antagonistic interests, the complex and contradictory plans, man with and against man will

produce warring forces and always increasing conflict.

Another class who talk about the steady evolution and progress toward peace are those who are ignorant of God's mind and will. Because of their total ignorance they cannot come into court, their testimony is of no avail. It is waste of time, even, to listen to their propositions and amiable chatterings about peace.

The third class are men who stand in the pulpit and with an open Bible before them and statements as plain as the shining of Jupiter or Mars on a clear night,—statements that foretell war and sorrow and tribulation; statements which picture a world filled with anguish and torment and tragedy,—these men dare to stand up and talk about peace, about the purple and the gold of millennial days just at hand; who cry “peace,” “peace,” when there is no peace.

Hear I pray you what the Word of God says about those who in this hour and in face of this warning talk about peace; who seek to lull the world to sleep on the threshold of the coming conflict.

“... the ambassadors of peace shall weep bitterly.” (Isa. 33:7)

“... saying, Peace, peace; when there is no peace.” (Jer. 6:14; 8:11)

“Destruction cometh; and they shall seek peace, and there shall be none.” (Ezek. 7:25)

“... they have seduced my people, saying, Peace; and there was no peace. . .” (Ezek. 13:10)

“... the prophets. . . which see visions of peace. . . and there is no peace, saith the Lord GOD.” (Ezek. 13:16)

It is because of this talk about peace, this repudiation of the warning of God that Scripture tells us the Tribulation and sorrow will come like a snare upon all those who dwell upon the face of the earth. It will come upon them unawares and they will be as those taken in a gin and trap.

I warn you that dire and terrible times are coming on the world; and that there can be no real, no abiding peace upon this sin-cursed earth till the *Prince of Peace Himself* shall come; till He who is King of kings and Lord of lords shall come to put down all authority, all principalities and powers, all unrighteousness and evil, bind the Devil beneath His feet and reign and rule with a *rod of iron*, dashing in pieces as a potter's vessel all opposition, all who rebel against God and His way. (Ps. 2:9; Rev. 2:27) He will establish a peace based on righteousness, the only foundation on which it can abide.

2. *It is time for those of you who profess to be Christians to make your calling and election sure.*

There are two classes of *professors* in the Church.

Those who *profess* the name of Christ and *possess* His life and nature; those who every day in one way or another manifest the truth and reality of this relationship.

There are those who *profess* the name of Christ but give no evidence of possessing the life of Christ.

To which of these classes do you as a professed Christian belong?

What is your estate?

Are you indifferent to the House of God?

Have you no joy in prayer?

Do you scarcely ever read the Word of God, never search it and find little in it for profit, or peace or pleasure?

Do you prefer worldly things, worldly ways and companionship to the things of God and the companionship of godly people?

If these are your experimental characteristics and you still claim the name and make the open profession of Christ, still allow your name to remain upon the Church book, then I call upon you to awake, arouse and find out whether you are deceiving yourself and your fellow man. Awake, arouse, I bid you; for, should the Son of God come before the morning you would have no time to get your scattered baggage together.

Your name is on the Church book!

Is it in the book of life?

What a horror of horrors if, after having professed the name of Christ He should come and you be left, outside the door.

O the agony of that moment when in spite of all your crying and beseeching appeal you should hear Him say:

“... I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity.” (Matt. 7:23)

Now is the time to make your calling and election sure.

Do you know sorrow in your heart for all your carelessness and lack of consistent Christian living? Do you have a heart's desire to own and serve Him? You have no time to lose, and you ought not to let this night pass into the morning until you have found out and settled for yourself. If you really would get close to Him and enter into fellowship and communion, clutch that desire and do not let it go till your face is turned to Him and hands outstretched.

Do this and He will touch you with His power even here and now.

Do not delay, you must arouse.

3. *The only place of security is in the Church of Christ.*

Listen! Do not make a mistake. I am not speaking of the mere outward, professing Church, but the true, the genuine, spiritual Church of Christ.

The only way into this Church is by *regeneration*.

The only way of regeneration is through sincere and honest faith in Christ, the faith which claims Him as personal sacrifice, substitute, redeemer, Lord and Master. He is the way, the truth and the life. He is the only door. By Him you may enter in and be saved. (See John 14:6; 10:9)

This is the time for decision.

This is the time for taking sides.

God is separating the wheat from the tares, and the tares from the wheat.

Some exceedingly foolish and would be teachers pretend that the gathering out of the tares first represents the destruction of the wicked before Christ comes for His own, and that therefore the Church, the true Church, if it does not actually go through the Tribulation is at least greatly scorched by its fiery trials. You have only to go into the country and you will find the farmer is not foolish enough to burn up the briars, the weeds and thorns before he has reaped his wheat and gathered it into the barn. He may cull out the useless stuff, but he will put it aside in heaps and wait till the harvest is housed before he sends the burning flames to clean the refuse of the field.

This word “Gather ye together” (See Matt. 13:30) used by the Lord in the parable has in it the idea of organizing, assembling, each after its own kind, separating them till they stand out in their special and distinctive characters. The tares will be assembled, organized by themselves, and the wheat will by the very separation be made distinctive in itself. The Children of the Devil will more and more get together and organize, the Children of God will more and more get together and seek their own.

This spirit of organization and separation is going on now.

There never was a time in the history of the earth when so much organization was going on as today. Two men can hardly meet that they do not say, “Let us get together; let us form a company, a club, a corporation, or a society.”

“Organize, get together.” That is the watchword.

Some churches, following the common rule, have so organized, indeed, that as churches of Christ they have almost organized themselves out of existence.

But it all has profound significance.

It means God is calling on men and women to take their places.

He is calling on each individual to take sides. He says “He that is not with me is against me...” (Matt. 12:30)

The hour of decision is here.

The day of compromise has gone by.

There is no such thing as neutrality. There is nothing in it except the *profession* and *hypocrisy* of it.

You must stand for something.

I have preached many years in this Church.

I have preached a long while tonight; but I am speaking to you from my heart and because the conviction and

fullness of it bid me speak. There is only one thought that impresses me at this moment, you men and women, this great crowd of men who are here must either go through the gates of God and have eternal fellowship with Christ; or, you must go through the gates of hell into eternal woe. There is no more doubt about a hell to come than there is doubt about a hell here. There are men and women in New York who tonight are living in hell and enduring every moment the torments of the damned.

If you have ever done anything wrong in the years gone by it is more of a hell to you tonight than it was then. You may wither with age, your body may be outwardly as a shrivelled mummy, but inside, in your consciousness, in every fold of your memory, deeper, more terrible, fresher than ever is the sin or failure of those years gone by. Your body will go, but this memory, this consciousness of your sin or sins and the sting and agony of the conscience will go on forever. The most terrible words which break on the ears in that hell whither the rich man went are these words which come across the bridgeless gulf:

“... Son, *remember* ...” (Luke 16:25)

Men, you must meet God, and there is only one place where you can meet Him in security and that is *underneath the blood of Christ*. I should feel myself a traitor to God and man if I did not make an effort to reach you tonight. I want every unsaved man or woman to become a saved man or woman. There is no reason why you should not be saved tonight and now. God has done everything necessary to save you.

The salvation is all provided in a risen and glorified Saviour.

The issue of your salvation is all summed up in these questions:

“Will you believe?” “Will you accept?” “Will you receive Jesus Christ now?”

Do not say you cannot understand and therefore cannot believe.

You cannot understand, you certainly cannot realize how a flame of fire can leap five hundred thousand miles in height from the heart of the sun, but on the testimony of scientist astronomers you believe it. You cannot fully understand how it is when a child at the first uses its right hand it is the left brain and not the right which becomes the instrument of thought. You do not understand it but you believe it on testimony. There are a million things you cannot reason about, cannot fully understand when you do reason, yet they are facts, they impress themselves on you as facts, you do not make any attempt to understand them, but you accept them. If you should refuse to believe or accept anything you could not explain or demonstrate or understand you would write yourself down a fool before you had gone ten steps in a world whose mode and environment are both mystery and fact.

O men and women, with the shadow of eternity falling across you this night, you must hear me.

I tell you the days are coming when the door of grace will be shut. The day is coming, the hour, the moment, when your opportunity will be gone forever.

I want you to hear, believe and be saved. Hear me as I repeat the wondrous message of God:

“That if thou shalt confess with thy MOUTH the Lord Jesus, and shalt BELIEVE IN THINE HEART that God hath raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved.” (Rom. 10:9)

I do not ask you to *do* things.

I do not ask you to *promise* things; but, in face of the fact that every beat of your heart like a “muffled drum” is sounding your march to the parade ground of eternity; in face of the fact that the wisest, the best and the most intellectual of the earth are turning to and bowing down before this Christ of God; in the face of, and by the verification of a Christian consciousness two thousand years in extent, universal, all pervading; in face of the indisputable fact that you have no guaranty of an hour or even a moment this side of eternity, I ask every man and woman among you, all who are willing and ready to accept Jesus Christ as a personal and present Saviour; all who will take God at His Word about Him; all who will step out on the promise of God concerning Him to do it now; do it for the sake of husband, wife, child, friend, and loved one, for the sake of your own soul. O man, O woman, young or old, if you will receive this risen Lord, this living and only Saviour, this Coming King, then I ask you to rise to your feet and by that act say, “I hereby accept and confess Him.”

Do that and the woe and anguish of the Great Tribulation and the endless judgment shall never fall on you.

NOTE.—In an audience which crowded the auditorium and packed the galleries, and where men seemed to predominate in number, scarcely a half dozen remained seated. With marvellous spontaneity the people responded to the invitation and rose to their feet.

IX.

THE FALLING STONE, OR THE OVERTHROW OF THE LAST KAISER

The Falling Stone
or
The Overthrow of the Last Kaiser

MY theme tonight is:

“The Falling Stone; or, God’s forecast of world politics now being fulfilled, the overthrow of the Last Kaiser, or Cæsar, and the setting up of the Fifth and final great world power.”

My text is to be found in the book of Daniel, second chapter, thirty-fourth, thirty-fifth and forty-fourth verses:

“Thou sawest till that a stone was cut out without hands, which smote the image upon his feet that were of iron and clay, and brake them to pieces . . . and the stone that smote the image became a great mountain, and filled the whole earth . . . And in the days of these kings shall the God of heaven set up a kingdom, which shall never be destroyed . . .”

In the previous sermon I spoke on the “Great Tribulation.” In presenting that subject I gave a general exposition of what is popularly known as “Daniel’s image,” together with corroborative testimony of the wild beasts Daniel saw in his own visions. I shall go over exactly the same ground tonight. I shall, however, give a more detailed exposition of the image and the symbolism of the beasts, verifying all from history till I reach the prophetic climax of the fourth empire. I shall then expound the mountain out of which the stone was cut, the stone itself, the falling of the stone and the setting up of the fifth and final kingdom. From all this I shall draw the corollary that God’s forecast of world politics is now being fulfilled and that these fulfilling events are the daily demonstrations that this Bible is the inspired, inerrant, infallible Word of God. I shall close as usual by an appeal to professed Christians and to those of you who may be unsaved.

Nebuchadnezzar was King of Babylon. Babylon, as a Kingdom, was in the zenith of its glory. It had been built on and out of the ruins of Assyria. It was so identified with it that classic writers like Herodotus and Strabo speak often of the Babylonians as Assyrians. The kingdom extended over Asia Minor, Syria, Palestine, Arabia, Egypt, part of Greece, the African littoral and Spain, as far as the pillars of Hercules.

The City of Babylon was in the noontide of its splendor.

The hanging gardens swept up, terrace on terrace of verdant foliage and playing fountains, to the palm fronded heights. The tower of Belus rose hundreds of feet higher than the present Tour Eiffel. It was ascended by an exterior spiral roadway. At the top was a sanctuary for worshippers and crowning it all, a statue of the god worth its weight in millions of gold.

The walls of the city were three hundred feet in height, looking down upon a trench half as high, a trench that could be flooded from an artificial lake operated by locks of modern construction. The walls were pierced by a hundred brazen gates. Behind each gate a thousand men stood armed and ready to spring forth at the first sounding of alarm. On the top of the walls was an esplanade or boulevard where chariots three abreast could be driven without incommoding one another. Bridges connected the flat roofed houses; so that there was an upper as well as lower city. In the lower city the streets crossed each other at right angles. They were paved and arcaded. The river Euphrates ran through the center of the city between marble banks or quays. Artistic bridges spanned the river, ferry boats glided back and forth, while here and there arched tunnels enabled the people to pass from side to side. In the heart of the city was the king’s palace—eight miles square.

The inhabitants were wholly given up to pleasure, to unbridled lust and drunkenness. Here virtue had no place and vice was crowned with flowers.

In self satisfied pride and abounding content, Nebuchadnezzar ruled over this wide and wealth-filled kingdom.

One night, in the depths of his luxurious sleep he dreamed a dream. When he awoke it had gone from him. Although he could not recall a single outline of it the impression weighed upon and terrified him. He summoned his wise men and astrologers. He commanded them to recall the dream and give him the interpretation. They protested. No king had ever made such a demand. Let him tell them the dream, they would give the interpretation. Nebuchadnezzar was filled with anger, with madness and fury that the absolutism of his will should be questioned or arrested even for a moment. He commanded them to be put to death.

Among the Jewish captives Nebuchadnezzar had led in his triumphal train after the siege and taking of Jerusalem were four young men, princes in Israel, among whom Daniel, the prophet, was easily preeminent. With the three others he had been placed by the king in the college of astrologers that they might become versed in the science, the knowledge and wisdom of the Chaldeans. The sentence included them. When Daniel heard of it he

went to the Chamberlain and through him sought an interview with the king. It was accorded him. He presented himself before Nebuchadnezzar. He asked for a respite, giving assurance should it be granted he would tell the dream and give the interpretation. The petition was accorded him. Immediately, he called together his companions, with them held a prayer-meeting and insistently besought the living God that He would give the longed-for revelation. The Lord God met his faith, gave him both the dream and the interpretation. He went in to the king and spread them before him.

This was the dream:

Nebuchadnezzar saw a great image.

Its head was of gold. Its breast and arms of silver. The belly and thighs were of brass. The legs were iron, but the feet and toes, part of iron, and part of clay.

There was a stone cut out of the mountain without hands.

The stone fell and smote the image on the feet. It broke the image to pieces. The pieces became as the chaff of the summer's threshing floor when it is swept by the fanning and separating breezes of the western wind.

The stone became a great mountain and filled the whole earth.

Speaking by the spirit of God Daniel says:

"... the dream is certain, and the interpretation thereof sure." (Dan. 2:45)

And this is the interpretation as spoken to the king:

"Thou, O king, art a king of kings: for the God of heaven hath given thee a kingdom, power, and strength, and glory." (Dan. 2:37)

In saying this Daniel was announcing not only that the head of gold symbolized the king, but, also, the kingdom, and that Babylon therefore was the *first* in the politico-prophetic series. At the same time, this direct gift of dominion and power from the hand of God was His official proclamation and authoritative affirmation of the "divine right of kings."

The commission to Nebuchadnezzar was the transfer of world rulership to Gentile hands.

It was the end of *Jewish time*.

It was the beginning of *Gentile time*.

God had purposed to rule the world governmentally through the elect and chosen nation of Israel. He purposed to send His incarnate Son to be their king and through Him and them to administrate righteousness and truth in the earth, bringing benediction and blessing to every creature.

The nation had failed, grievously and utterly failed.

They had sinned against light.

Ten tribes had deliberately and from political motives gone into idolatry.

God had punished them by sending the Assyrians to carry them into captivity. They still exist in their descendants, but, for twenty-five centuries all identification has been concealed. They are known as "the ten lost tribes."

The other two tribes gave themselves up to moral rebellion against God and ended, likewise, in idolatry.

God again smote with the hand of judgment. He sent Nebuchadnezzar to besiege Jerusalem, overthrow it and bring the people captive to his golden city.

The hour in which Daniel was now speaking, captive and forced into the role of an astrologer, was proof of the helplessness of the people, the seal of God's wrath and judgment against them as a nation.

The transfer of national authority to the Gentiles was the climax of the judgment.

Jewish time had come to an end.

Gentile time had begun.

Jerusalem was down.

Babylon was up.

Jerusalem was a political cypher.

Babylon had become the political center.

Babylon as the head of gold had become the first depository of divinely granted world power in the hand of the Gentiles.

The breast and arms of silver symbolize the kingdom that should come after Babylon.

If you would know that kingdom and know it from the pages of the Word without going into a library or needing to read history written by men; if you wish to see it in a scenic and dramatic revelation from God, open to the fifth chapter of this amazing and far-seeing book of Daniel.

The scene as recorded is in the City of Babylon.

The era is the reign of Belshazzar, grandson of Nebuchadnezzar.

The time, night. The particular location, the banqueting hall of the king's palace. All that the lavish wealth of a king's inexhaustible treasury; all that the genius of Babylonian craftsmen and the skill of Babylonian artists could do had been done to make this banqueting hall a dream of wonder and an appeal of beauty. The ceiling was made to imitate the star-fretted sky of night, concealed lights flashing through gold and silver centers as from very stars themselves. The walls were paneled and filled with frescoed forms and scenes that told the license of the hour. The floor was a mosaic of marbled colors. In the center were great tables loaded with gold and silver vessels and groaning with the profuse provisions for the feast. Fountains tossed up and down their streams of crystal music. From hidden openings in the walls sweet perfumes were sprayed upon the guests. Dancing girls with tinkling silver bells on arm and ankle, posturing in lithesome, thinly veiled bodies filled the air with the tintinabulations of their rhythmic moving feet. Long couches were drawn to the tables that the revellers might recline and eat and drink at ease.

Belshazzar had invited a thousand of his lords, their wives, concubines and mistresses, the most dissolute of all women in a city where every woman to be a woman must be unchaste and dissolute.

They gave themselves up to the riot of pleasure, to the freedom of indescribable debauch.

In the midst of the orgy in which each was bound in honor of the god whose feast they celebrated to become beastly and wantonly drunk, Belshazzar bethought him of the golden vessels taken by his grandfather from the temple in Jerusalem. He commanded them to be brought. They filled them with wine. Lifting them high they drunk and gave praises to the gods of gold, of silver, of brass, of iron, of wood and stone.

Suddenly, when the saturnalia was at its worst, most sensual, most godless and blasphemous pitch, a hand without a sleeve was thrust forth and began to write on the plaster of the wall.

In a moment the drunken crowd was hushed and sobered.

Strange were the characters the fingers so swiftly wrote and then vanished, leaving them there to smite with terror the frightened, rolling eyes which could not decipher them.

The king sent for his wise men and astrologers.

He offered wealth and rulership in the kingdom to whomsoever among them could read and make plain the writing.

None could read it.

Then the queen suggested that Daniel was in the city. He had been an interpreter to the king's grandfather. Nebuchadnezzar had exalted and honored him. He had in him the spirit of the holy gods; let them send for him.

Daniel was sought for, found and brought in. The king offered him the bribe of wealth, of high honor and rulership in the kingdom.

Daniel bade the king keep his gifts, give his bribes to another. He would speak as an ambassador of God. He would tell the truth without fear or favor.

He said:

". . . Let thy gifts be to thyself, and give thy rewards to another; yet I will read the writing unto the king, and make known to him the interpretation." (Dan. 5:17)

The words were:

“... MENE, MENE, TEKEL, UPHARSIN.” (Dan. 5:25)

And this was the interpretation:

“... MENE; God hath numbered thy kingdom, and finished it.

“TEKEL; Thou art weighed in the balances, and art found wanting.

“PERES; Thy kingdom is divided, and *given to the Medes and Persians.*” (Dan. 5:26-28)

Scarcely had he gone and the sounds of his footsteps died away when there was the tramp of marching feet, the quick word of command; the flash of gleaming spears, the shouts of victory and the Persians swept into the hall.

Belshazzar was slain and Darius the Median, under the command of Cyrus, took the kingdom.

Thus *Medo-Persia* was the *second* kingdom, the kingdom therefore symbolized by the breast and arms of silver; even as Daniel had foretold:

“And after thee (after the head of gold) shall arise another kingdom inferior to thee (inferior as silver is to gold) ...” (Dan. 2:39).

The third metal in the image and the third portion of it, the belly and thighs of brass represented a third kingdom, the kingdom which, necessarily, should come after Medo-Persia; for, Daniel said:

“... and another third kingdom of brass ...” (Dan. 2:39).

To find this third and brazen kingdom I shall ask you to turn to the eighth chapter of this book of Daniel and find there the record of a vision given to Daniel himself.

In this vision he saw a ram pushing westward and northward and southward. It had two horns, but one higher than the other. Then a he-goat came from the west. It had a notable horn between its eyes. It rushed upon the ram where it had taken its stand on the banks of a river, overthrew it and stamped on it. The goat waxed exceeding great; but in the moment of its greatness the notable horn was broken and in its stead came up four others.

The angel Gabriel came to Daniel and gave him the interpretation of the vision:

The ram with the two horns, he said, represented the kings of Media and Persia (that is to say the Medo-Persian kingdom) the rough goat symbolized Greece, the notable horn between its eyes the first king. The breaking off of the notable horn was the sudden end that should come to the first king. The four horns coming up in place of it—four kings or kingdoms that then should arise as a consequence of the abrupt ending of the first king of Greece.

Let us take up the page of history and read it in the light and interpretation of this vision.

The Persian Kingdom, like the ram, pushed its conquering arms northward and southward and then westward. Then appeared Alexander of Macedon. At the head of his Greeks he crossed over into Asia Minor. He swept on to the river Granicus. The Persian host were drawn up in battle array on the other side. Alexander committed a tactical fault. He made a frontal attack on a superior enemy behind a river. Nevertheless, with his troops he plunged in. In spite of the scythed chariots and the heavy cavalry of the foe he out-generalled, out-flanked, and defeated him. He rushed on to Issus, smashed into fragments the army of six hundred thousand men Darius had opposed to him. A year and a half later after having subjugated Syria, Palestine and Egypt he marched against the million of men Darius had recruited from more than twenty nations and with the might and wisdom and scintillating splendor of incomparable military genius overthrew the Persians and brought to an end the second great Gentile world power. He entered Babylon, advanced to the rivers of India and because his troops would go no further returned, enthroned himself in the licentious city and died suddenly as the consequence of a drunken debauch.

His four great generals took his kingdom and divided it among themselves.

I shall speak of these kingdoms presently. Since the rough he-goat overthrowing the ram is Greece; since the ram is the symbol of Medo-Persia and Medo-Persia is the *second* kingdom, and is represented in the image by silver, then Greece is the *third* kingdom and is represented in the image by brass—the metal that comes after the silver.

Previously to the vision of the ram and the he-goat Daniel had a vision of four wild beasts coming up out of the Mediterranean Sea.

The record of this vision is to be found in the seventh chapter.

The *first* beast was like a *lion*, with the wings of an eagle.

The *second* was a *bear*. It had three ribs between its teeth; and a voice bade it arouse and devour much flesh.

The *third* beast was a *leopard*. It had four wings of a fowl.

The *fourth* beast was a monster with great *iron* teeth and *ten horns*.

The angel tells Daniel the *fourth* beast is the *fourth* kingdom or world power on earth.

As this fourth beast is declared to be the symbol of a kingdom, it follows that the other three are also symbols of kingdoms.

The four wild beasts therefore represent four kingdoms or four world empires.

And I would have you notice and let it sink deep in your minds as the picture which God Himself forewarningly gives that these are WILD BEASTS and set forth the *character* of government in the closing hours of this age; not lamb-like governments, NOT GOVERNMENTS OF PEACE, but *wild-beast governments*; governments which, like wild beasts, will slay and tear and ravage and glut themselves with blood and prey.

Since the four parts of the image, the gold, the silver, the brass and the iron represent four great Gentile world powers, it is evident that the four wild beasts also representing four great world powers are the corroborating symbols of the same kingdoms.

The *lion* with eagle's wings is the *first* beast, is the first of the four gentile kingdoms, coordinates by position the head of gold in the image and is therefore, necessarily, the symbol of the kingdom of Babylon.

There are thus three symbols of that kingdom:

The *golden head*.

The *lion*.

The lion with *eagle's wings*.

Turn to the fourteenth chapter of Isaiah and you will find Babylon there described as a "golden" city.

"That thou shalt take up this proverb against the king of Babylon, and say, How hath the oppressor ceased! the *golden city* ceased!" (Isa. 14:4)

The prophet Jeremiah writes:

"Babylon hath been a *golden cup* in the LORD'S hand . . ." (Jer. 51:7).

In the fourth chapter of his prophecy he speaks of evil coming upon Judah from the north. The "north" is characteristically in Scripture applied to Babylon; as it is written:

"For thus saith the Lord GOD; Behold, I will bring upon Tyrus Nebuchadrezzar (Nebuchadnezzar) king of Babylon, a king of kings, *from the north* . . ." (Ezek. 26:7).

The "evil" then of which Jeremiah warns is the king of Babylon and Babylon as a power of evil. He speaks of this evil as the "The *lion* is come up from his thicket . . ." (Jer. 4:6,7).

Thus the *lion* is a symbol of Babylon.

The *eagle* is a symbol of Babylon; as it is written:

"For, lo, I raise up the Chaldeans (the Babylonians) . . . they shall fly as the eagle . . ." (Hab. 1:6,8).

If ever the opportunity shall come to you to visit the British Museum in London, or the Louvre in Paris you will see the winged lions in stone that once guarded the doors of the palace in Babylon; and down there by the Birs Nimroud, in the ruins of the golden city they have found a porcelain plaque on which Nebuchadnezzar caused to be stamped *the figure of lions*.

Thus history affirms Babylon to be the *first* of the four Gentile world powers.

The *second* beast was a *bear*, and as it symbolizes the *second* kingdom coordinates the *second part* of the image, the breast and arms of silver.

We have seen this part of the image to be the symbol of Medo-Persia, the kingdom which comes after Babylon.

Medo-Persia therefore has three symbols.

The *silver* breast and arms of the statue.

The *devouring* bear.

The *ram* with the long and short horns that was overcome by the *he goat*.

Turn again to the page of history.

You will find the “Immortal Guard” of Persia wore silver corslets or cuirass.

Read history and you will find the Medes and Persians and specially the Medes were as cruel and devouring in their slaughter as a wild and voracious bear.

As you pursue your reading you will learn that the king of Persia rode at the head of his army wearing a *ram’s* head made of gold and set with sparkling jewels: and if tomorrow you could go to Persepolis you would see sculptured on the pillars still standing there the figure of a *ram’s head, one horn longer than the other*.

Thus history affirms Medo-Persia to be the second prophetic kingdom.

The *third* beast is a *leopard* with wings. It is the symbol of the *third* kingdom. It coordinates the third part of the image, the belly and thighs of *brass*. As this third and brazen part sets forth the kingdom that should come after the second part, *after the silver*, after Medo-Persia, and in Daniel’s vision of the ram and *he goat, Greece overcomes Medo-Persia, then* Greece is the third kingdom.

Greece has three symbols.

The *brass* or brazen part of the image.

The *winged leopard*.

The *he goat*.

When classic writers speak of the Grecian army, they use such *words as these*:

Chalkachitones achaioi.

That is, “*Brazen coated Greeks*.”

The *leopard* is a *small* animal, but strong, quick in action and exceedingly swift.

The four wings give quadruple power and as a symbol signify extraordinary speed.

Alexander, like Napoleon, was small, and like him, capable of great endurance. The distinctive feature of his strategy was the swiftness of his march. He so led his army that the parasangs or miles seemed to flee beneath their feet.

But now note the wonder of corroboration.

When, according to Justin, Caranus, the founder or first king of Macedonia was seeking with a great company of Greeks a new habitation, the oracle they consulted bade them follow a herd of goats. A storm broke out. They saw a herd of wild goats trying to escape from the windy tempest. The people followed them. They were led to the town of Edessa. The king made it his capital. He called it *Ægæ* “the goat’s town.” The people were thenceforth known as *Ægædœ*, “the goat’s people.”

Alexander of Macedon himself named his son *Ægus*, the “son of a goat.”

When Pyrrhus, king of Epirus (that Pyrrhus of whom Hannibal is reported to have said of all generals he was the first) put on his helmet having goat’s horns for a crest he did more to conquer the Macedonians than by all his splendid feat of arms; when they saw it they broke forth into wild acclaim, recognizing it as the symbol of their land.

But now, I bid you take up your map, look at the waters of the Mediterranean as they roll between Greece and Asia Minor and it will be seen the name of the Grecian Archipelago is the *Ægean Sea*, and that means the *Goat Sea, the sea of the goat*.

Thus history testifies that Greece is the third great world power.

The *fourth* beast is a monster with great *iron teeth* and *ten horns*.

The angel tells Daniel this is the *fourth kingdom* upon earth;

It corresponds with the *fourth part* of the image.

The fourth part of the image consists of the two legs of iron and the ten toes, part of iron and part of clay.

To find the fourth kingdom or empire as thus doubly symbolized without going to a reference library, and to find it in the Bible, turn to the New Testament.

There we learn our Lord Jesus Christ was born, not only under the shining stars and the angel song, but under and during the reign of Augustus Cæsar emperor of *Rome*; and that he was put to death under Tiberias Cæsar of *Rome*; that *Rome* was the great world power, the power that succeeded Greece.

The *characteristic element* of the *fourth part of the statue* is:

Iron.

In the *fourth beast* the teeth are *iron* teeth.

As school boys and school girls we read of the “*iron* legions of Rome.”

The fourth empire, Rome, included all the territory of the three preceding kingdoms, *Greece*, *Medo-Persia* and *Babylon*.

For a moment, let us go back to the vision of the goat, to the four horns that came up when the great and notable horn was broken.

These four were Alexander’s generals: *Seleucus*, *Ptolemy*, *Cassander* and *Lysimachus*.

Seleucus took *Babylon*, *Persia*, *Syria* and *Palestine*.

Ptolemy had *Egypt*.

Cassander received *Greece* and *Macedonia*.

Lysimachus possessed the countries now occupied by *Rommania*, *Thrace* and *Asia Minor* as far as the *Taurus Mountains*.

Then Rome began to expand.

The fragments of the Grecian empire were conquered one after another and incorporated. The victorious eagles flew west and east. Under Trajan Rome ruled from the Scottish hills, from Britain and the Pillars of Hercules to the Euphrates and the Persian plains; from the Rhine and the Danubian Solitudes to Africa and the glittering sands of Sahara, and thus included under her far-reaching and iron sceptre the world kingdoms that in turn had ruled before her.

We go back to the fourth part of the statue and find it consisting of the two legs of iron, the feet and the ten toes.

We discover, at the same time, that the fourth beast has ten horns and that these ten horns are said by the angel to be ten kings.

As the fourth beast coordinates the fourth part of the image then the *ten toes* are equivalent to the *ten* kings. This is confirmed by Daniel, who after speaking of the toes, refers to them again and uses the words “And in the days of these kings . . .” (Dan. 2:44).

These Kings or kingdoms are to be partly strong and partly broken.

The iron is the element that is strong.

Clay is the element that is weak.

Iron is the symbol of monarchy.

Clay as I have shown you in a previous sermon is the symbol of the rule of the people—*democracy*.

Monarchy and democracy cannot unite, or remain united in any one form of government.

Such a government must be partly strong and partly broken.

The breaking, separation and fragmentation are found in the clay, in the rule of the people, in democracy.

There are three things therefore to be considered in this fourth part of the image:

The two legs.

The ten toes.

The mixed condition of iron and clay.

The two legs symbolize the division of the fourth, or Roman empire, into two equal parts.

The ten toes signify a second and final division into ten kingdoms.

The mixture of iron and clay in the ten toes is a symbolic prophecy that these ten kings—(since clay is the last in order) will be elected by the people and will be *democratic kings*.

Let us turn to history.

A thousand years after the prophecy Rome was divided into two great halves under the brothers Valentinian and Valens. The Western Empire had its capital at Rome. Constantinople or Byzantium became the capital of the Eastern Empire.

The Western Empire continued some four hundred years after Christ and then began to break up under the incursion of Teutonic hordes into smaller states.

The Eastern Empire with varying fortunes lasted till 1453, when it was taken by the Turks. The Turkish Empire has held it intact to the Persian boundaries till within the last few years and specially within the last decade. Like its own eastern boundary river which according to prophecy is to be dried up, it has dwindled in extent until today only a relatively small portion of territory surrounding Constantinople is under the rule of the crescent and the power of its scimitar.

On Christmas day, 800, the great basilica of Saint Peter's in Rome, was filled with a worshipping throng.

Pope Leo Third came down from his pontifical chair to the high altar before which Charlemagne, the king of the Franks, was kneeling, and placing on his head a golden and splendid crown, saluted him and proclaimed him—Emperor of Rome. Thus was the Western Empire revived and through succeeding centuries recognized as the “Holy Roman Empire.”

It attempted to influence and control the Eastern Empire. Through war, internal convulsion and intrigue it became more Teutonic than Latin, more German than Roman and finally degenerated into a heterogeneous company of petty German, or German-controlled states. Eventually the emperor of Austria under pressure took over the title of Cæsar, Emperor of Rome. A double-headed eagle became his ensign. It was the shadow of the claim that as this monster in spite of two heads had one body, so Rome even though divided remained one empire. It was the mystical affirmation that whatever divisions might come in the territory occupied by it, Rome as the fourth and final ordained world power, would continue as such till the end of Gentile time.

This ensign is still borne on the banners of Austria. It is, also, the ensign of Russia, which, in the intimacy and secrecy of imperial plans and councils, believes itself to be the legitimate heir and rightful possessor of the one time Eastern (and really, Greek) Empire; believes Constantinople, or Byzantium (and neither Petrograd nor Moscow) to be its genuine capital and the true metropolitan center of the Greek Church. This mysterious ensign is now borne aloft and thrust into the eyes of a startled world as the blazon of Germany, whose feudal war lord and Kaiser aims to be *the* Cæsar of a revived Teutonic Roman Empire; for, this word *Czar* in Russia, and *Kaiser* in Germany is the fateful, old-time and abiding title—Cæsar.

The Holy Roman Empire degenerated into such a political condition that the satirical Voltaire wittily said of it, that it was “neither holy, nor Roman, nor an empire.”

Then Napoleon arose and burst over Europe like a cyclone, smashed Austria, and made a peace in which emperors played second parts. The emperor of Austria was forced to lay aside his title as Cæsar of Rome. Napoleon set up the Confederation of the Rhine. He unmade and made kings at his will. He took the thrones of nations and gave them to whom he willed. He purposed to establish a confederation of subordinate kings in which he should occupy the position of a king of kings and lord of lords. He called the Jewish Sanhedrin together and planned to set up the Jewish state. He aimed to take over Syria, Asia Minor, Mesopotamia, dreamed of Babylon and the East. He drew up plans for the conquest of England and had assembled his troops on the shores of the English Channel. He had placed on his head with his own hands the crown of Charlemagne. He openly affirmed that he was the true heir of that Frankish king. Had he realized his ambition he would have restored the Roman Empire as a confederation of kings over which he would himself have reigned supreme as the master of the world.

In all this he was throwing down the shadows of coming events; for, according to the prophecy of the image and the beasts the Roman Empire, or the territory once occupied by it, was after the first division to be divided a second and final time among a confederation of kings—*ten* in number (*ten toes, ten horns*). And as the toes were

five on each foot, at the end of each *iron* leg, so these ten kings would be apportioned—five in each of the first great political divisions—five in Western and five in the Eastern Empire; that is, in the territory distinctively occupied by each division.

No such tenfold division has ever taken place.

It does not exist today.

It is, therefore, *future*.

Four of these kingdoms we know. They are the four into which Alexander's kingdom was divided.

Babylon with Persia, Syria and Palestine.

Egypt—with the African Littoral.

Greece with Macedonia.

The Balkans, that portion covered by Thrace, Bythinia, Asia Minor to the Taurus.

These kingdoms (the entire ten) will be brought about in their final state by the action of the people; but because of the mixture of monarchy and democracy, it will be a state of incohesion and weakness.

Daniel tells us that among the ten horns of the fourth beast a little horn arose before whom three horns were plucked up. This little horn therefore is an eleventh horn, and according to the symbol, an eleventh king.

If you will now turn to the thirteenth chapter of the Revelation you will find there the description of a composite beast.

It is like a *leopard*. It has the feet of a *bear* and the mouth of a *lion*.

It has ten horns.

The *lion* is the symbol of *Babylon*, the *bear* of *Medo-Persia* and the *leopard* of *Greece*.

The *ten horns* are *the ten kings*.

This is the picture of a kingdom which includes *Babylon*, *Medo-Persia* and *Greece*, and is, therefore, the *fourth* or *Roman Empire*.

The ten kings are a declaration that it is the *Roman Empire* in its *final tenfold division*.

The beast, consisting of these distinct national characteristics, carrying and therefore controlling the coming and the going of the horns or kings is the symbol of a person whose sphere of action is the region of the fourth or Roman Empire, and who has power and authority over the ten kings. That he is a person is seen in the fifth verse where it is written that to this beast was given "... a mouth speaking great things and blasphemies ..." (Rev. 13:5).

As a person authoritatively superior to the ten kings this beast stands related to them as an *eleventh* king, or horn. He is therefore identical with the little horn which rose among the ten as seen by Daniel. Thus the little horn and this beast of Revelation thirteenth set forth a supreme king, the head and chief of the ten kings. This conclusion is corroborated, made definite and clear in the seventeenth chapter of the Revelation, the twelfth and thirteenth verses, where it is written:

"And the ten horns which thou sawest are ten kings, which have received no kingdom as yet; but receive power as kings one hour (or, literally, 'at the same time') with the beast.

"These have one (or the same) mind, and shall give their power and strength unto the beast."

The little horn of Daniel and the ten-horned beast of Revelation set forth a supreme king, a supreme Cæsar or Kaiser who will rise to reign and rule over the ten democratic kings who are to come into associated power with him in the territory and realm of ancient Rome.

He is a coming king of kings and lord of lords.

He is an imitation, a counterfeit king of kings, a forerunner and antagonist of the true King of kings.

He is spoken of in Scripture under various titles.

He is known as the *little horn*.

(The attempt of a certain school of expositors to make the little horn of Daniel *eighth* distinct from the little horn of Daniel *seventh* is a piece of disastrous, contradictory and confusing exegesis conceived in absolute error

and certain to darken counsel with words without knowledge.)

He is the *prince that shall come*. The *king of fierce countenance*. The *king who understands dark sentences*. The *king of the North*. The *wilful king*. He is known as the *Rod of God's anger*. The *ax that boasteth itself against God*. The *staff that lifts itself up*. The *man of the earth*. The *shaker of nations*. The *proud man*. The *spoiler*. The *extortioner*. The *nail that seeks to fasten itself in a sure place*. He that *cometh up out of the pit*. *Leviathan*. The *destroyer of fortresses*. He who *plans destruction while proposing peace*. The *piercing serpent*. The *crooked serpent*. The *transgressor*. The *man whose desire is as hell*. The *man who cannot be satisfied*. The *man who maketh the earth to tremble*. The *man who heapeth all nations to himself*. The *king*. The *ultimate fool who says in his heart there is no God*. The *king for whom Tophet is prepared*. The *wicked one*. The *lawless one*. The *man wiser than Daniel*. The *man from whom no secret can be hidden*. The *man of sin*. The *son of perdition*. The *man who says "I will be like the Most High."* The *man who exalteth himself as God*. The *man whose coming is after the energy of Satan*. The *man who will come with all lying signs and wonders*. The *Assyrian*. The *Chaldean*. The *king of Babylon*.

He will arise as a military leader and then as king from Babylon. Babylon will rise and grow like a mushroom. It will come up as in a night. It will be the commercial center of the East and West. Already railway tracks are pointing to Baghdad and the ruins of the ancient city. I have read a letter recently written from Babylon in which the writer said, "Could we but see how the old canals of the Euphratean valley had been redigged and how every sign indicated the 'Drive to the East,' we would be startled at the near approach of that prophetic hour when the golden city should once more rise in all her power and glory."

This man of many titles is he who is symbolized by the "Wild Beast," and is definitely declared by John to be "The Anti-Christ."

He is foreshadowed by *Nimrod*, the original builder of Babylon, and who is called, literally, the "mighty rebel," by *Chedorlaomer*, by *Saul*, by *Absalom* (the denier of the Father) by *Herod*, and by such an one as *Antiochus Epiphanes*.

By intrigue, by diplomacy he will become king and possessor of Babylon. He will subdue or bring under control, *Persia*, all *Asia Minor*, *Syria*, *Palestine* and *Egypt*.

On account of the troubled and reactionary times the ten kings will invite him to become dictator, *world ruler*. He will accept. He will take the title of the Prince of Rome (Daniel says he will be the prince of the people who destroyed Jerusalem. The people who destroyed Jerusalem were Romans; therefore, he will be the prince of the Romans, Prince of Rome).

Thus will Rome be revived under its tenfold form.

Elected as head of the ten kings, he will be a king of kings and lord of lords.

His character is clearly set before as in Scripture.

He is a man of "fierce countenance," (See Dan. 8:23) of such immense personality, such greatness of individuality that men will humble themselves before him.

His military genius is so supreme none can be compared with him; not Alexander, who conquered a world at thirty-three; not Hannibal, who trod the Alps beneath him as though they were but hillocks; not Cæsar, who triumphed over Gaul; not Napoleon, who combined and exceeded the genius of all; not Napoleon, who stands as a soldier without a peer; not one nor all of these are more than pigmies by his side. His forethought, his knowledge of detail, his ability to penetrate and know the secret thought of his foe, his anticipation of events, will enable him to pass through all opposition as though it were an open door and made ready for his purpose. He will stride from victory to victory.

He is a scientist, a high priest of the occult. His hand is upon the forces of the unseen. He has a god he worships, an invisible presence, a mighty spirit whose bidding he gladly obeys. This god is he whom Scripture defines as ". . . that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan," "the great dragon." (Rev. 12:9) The Apostle John says the dragon, or Devil, will give him ". . . his power, and his seat, and great authority." (Rev. 13:2) The Apostle Paul says his ". . . coming is after the working (or energy) of Satan. . ." (II Thess. 2:9) Because of this Satan whom the apostle calls "the god of this world," (See II Cor. 4:4) and whom our Lord affirms to be the "prince (and ruler) of this world," (See John 12:31; 14:30; 16:11) he will come with ". . . all power and signs and *lying wonders*," (II Thess. 2:9) wonders and signs so great that were it at all possible, the Son of God says, he would deceive the very elect. (See Matt. 24:24)

He is a statesman. He sees that Germany and Russia will seek to combine for the possession of the East. He will pass into Palestine. He will restore the land to the Jew. He will use the ships of one of the ten nations to bring them from distant countries. He will set up the Jewish state. He will make "Zionism" a political fact. He will enter into a treaty with the head of the state for seven years. His object will be to build up a buffer against the inroad of either Germany or Russia.

At the end of three years and a half he will break his treaty.

The judgment of God will be loosed upon him and his kingdom as upon Pharaoh and Egypt. It will stir up the fierceness, the wickedness and blasphemy of the king. He will turn in fury upon the Jews. He will become their most bitter and cruel persecutor. It will be the time the prophet has foretold as ". . .the time of Jacob's trouble;" (Jer. 30:7). It is the hour of which the Lord has warned as the "Great Tribulation," (See Matt. 24:21) a condition so fearful, so full of suffering and mortal anguish, suffering from the hand of man, from devils and the judgments of God, that He has said there has never been anything like it since the world began, there never will be anything like it again; a time so full of agony and woe, of darkness, despair and deep depression that unless God should shorten the time ". . .there should no flesh be saved:" (Matt. 24:22)

Rebellion breaks out against the emperor.

Egypt rebels.

He gathers his armies. He marches thither. He lays his hand upon the treasures. He spoils the land. He sweeps back the rebellious tide.

A rebellion breaks out in Jerusalem.

Witnesses have arisen who testify against him as *the son of perdition*. They seek to turn the hearts of the Jews back to the faith of the fathers. They proclaim that Jesus of Nazareth was the true Messiah, that He is the true and covenant King, the Holy One of Israel, the God of the whole earth. They announce He is coming to Jerusalem to deliver His elect. They appeal to the people to turn away from the emperor as the "refuge of lies." (See Isa. 28:17) They affirm the covenant with him to be a "covenant with death" and "hell," and call upon the people to disannul it and repudiate him. (See Isa. 28:18)

The elect remnant hear the call and respond. They deny all allegiance to this "man of the earth." (See Ps. 10:18)

In fury he enters "into the glorious land," (See Dan. 11:41) the Holy Land. He marches with mad haste and threatenings toward Jerusalem.

In the midst of his rush "tidings out of the east and out of the north shall trouble him." (See Dan. 11:44) He hears that Babylon is threatened. The waters of the Euphrates are drying up. The armies from the "sunrise" kingdom are moving westward. He goes forth with increased fury to destroy. He changes his route and marches northward to the plain of Esdraelon, called in Scripture, *Armageddon*. From the beginning this plain has been the *gathering* place of armies. The dews of Hermon have fallen here upon the banners of nearly every nation of the earth, upon Assyrian, Arabian, Babylonian and Egyptian. Here Crusader and Saracen have met, the squares of France have withstood the dash of Mamelukes, the West and the East have clashed for victory, scimitar and spear have answered sword and gun and the blood of men poured out without measure has fructified the soil, given growth to grasses, lush and long, and painted with deeper crimson the scarlet poppies of the field.

In this great gathering place he is joined by fresh contingents. After a pause, he turns southward again and marches toward the sacred city.

Isaiah describes his march. With hurrying footstep he moves. He will not allow his baggage to detain him. Here tonight scarcely halting, miles away ere noon tomorrow. Terror fills the air. The inhabitants of villages flee at his approach. Women wail at the mention of his name. He comes in sight of the city. Like Titus of old he pitches his headquarters on Scopus. Jerusalem is surrounded. His troops fill the valley of Jehoshaphat. The prophecy of Joel begins to be fulfilled; as it is written:

"Multitudes, multitudes in the valley of decision: for the day of the LORD is near in the valley of decision." (Joel 3:14)

For the Lord has said:

"I will also gather all nations, and will bring them down into the valley of Jehoshaphat, and will plead with them there . . ." (Joel 3:2)

It is the valley of decision.

It is the hour of decision.

The hour of consummation and that determined on is at hand.

The city is taken, the houses rifled, the women ravished, half of the people are made prisoners. The king goes to the temple which he had permitted the people to rebuild. He seats himself in the Most Holy place. He claims that he is very God. God is force, He is energy. Energy and force are God. Man is the highest expression of that energy and force. He is the enthronement of it personally and intellectually. If men will worship the idea of God, he the King as supreme among all men is the supreme, the ultimate manifestation of that idea. In him men may find God. There is none other God than man, and as supreme man, he is supreme God. By the hand of his prime minister he works signs and wonders that might well deceive the elect. He brings down fire out of heaven. He sets up an image of the king. He causes it to be placed on the pinnacle of the temple in the sight of all. He commands men to worship it, to pay divine honors, as of old they were paid to the image of Rome's emperors.

All who would do business are commanded to wear the mark, or the name, or the number of the name of the emperor, either on the forehead or on the right hand.

The whole world trembles before him, and yet acclaims him.

He seems to have reached the apex of his glory.

And now note—

In giving the description of the image Daniel begins with the golden head, then the breast and arms of silver, the belly and thighs of brass, the legs of iron and the toes, part iron and part clay; but when a statue has been cast we begin to build and set it up at the feet and work upward to the head. *The head is the last piece set on.* It is the climax.

This is the fashion in which the antitypical, the actual political statue will be set up.

The ten kings will come into view.

These kings or kingdoms will comprise all that was once Rome as to territory, the kingdom of Greece in its fullest extent, Medo-Persia, Babylon; and then—this eleventh king, the king who is over all will come as the *antitypical golden head*. He will be the real king of Babylon whom the prophet sees in his shadowy form standing behind Nebuchadnezzar when he says unto him, “. . . Thou art this head of gold.” (Dan. 2:38)

There he sits in the temple of God, the head of gold, the king of Babylon, the man of sin, the son of perdition, the lawless one, the Anti-christ.

And there for a moment I shall leave him and ask you now to consider with me the falling stone which as it fell smote the image on its feet and broke it in pieces.

There are five things to be considered.

The *mountain* out of which the stone was cut.

The stone cut out of the mountains.

The stone cut out of the mountain *without hands*.

The falling stone.

The stone becoming a great mountain and filling the earth.

The mountain out of which the stone was cut. Strangely enough expositors and commentators have ignored this mountain, or passed lightly over the mention of it; and yet, it is in itself a key and factor among the symbols.

In the *thirtieth psalm* and *seventh verse*, David says:

“LORD, by thy favour thou hast made my mountain to stand strong . . .”

By “mountain” David means his throne and kingdom, the throne and kingdom of Israel.

The mountain out of which the stone was cut is the nation and kingdom of Israel, but specially that side of the kingdom which is Judah.

In saying the stone was cut out of the mountain Daniel is saying it was taken out of Israel, out of Judah.

The stone cut out of the mountain.

The stone is our Lord Jesus Christ.

Standing before the Jewish Sanhedrin and answering concerning the healing of the lame man, as recorded in the book of *Acts, fourth chapter, tenth and eleventh verses*, the Apostle Peter says:

“Be it known unto you all, and to all the people of Israel, that by the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth, whom ye crucified, whom God raised from the dead, even by him doth this man stand here before you whole.

“This is the stone which was set at nought of you builders, which is become the head of the corner.”

In his first epistle Peter says of our Lord Jesus Christ that He is:

“... a living stone, disallowed indeed of men, but chosen of God, and precious,” (I Peter 2:4).

He quotes the Word of God in the twenty-eighth chapter of the prophet Isaiah:

“Behold, I lay in Sion a chief corner stone, elect, precious; and he that believeth on *Him* (the stone) shall not be confounded.” (I Peter 2:6; Isa. 28:16)

To those who are unbelievers the apostle says our Lord Jesus Christ is:

“And a *stone* of stumbling, and a *rock* of offence . . .” (I Peter 2:8; Isa. 8:14)

In His discourse recorded in the twenty-first chapter of Matthew, our Lord Himself affirms that He is the stone and in warning and far-reaching words says:

“And whosoever shall fall on this stone shall be broken: but on whomsoever it shall *fall*, it will grind him to powder.” (Matt. 21:44; Luke 20:18)

Beyond all question, then, our Lord Jesus Christ is the stone cut out of the mountain.

The stone cut out of the mountain without hands.

As “hands” stand for the use of means which are natural, “without” hands signifies means that are not natural, means that are beyond natural. It is the inspired and adverb way of saying “*supernaturally*.” As the mountain is Israel, and the stone is our Lord Jesus Christ, then our Lord Jesus Christ was supernaturally brought out of Israel. To be brought out or cut out of Israel, signifies to originate in Israel. To originate in and out of Israel is to be born in and of Israel. The statement that the stone was cut out of the mountain without hands is the symbolic way of saying the birth of our Lord Jesus Christ as an Israelite, as a Jew was supernatural. It is the symbolic way of saying our Lord Jesus Christ should not have a natural father, that God should be His Father, and therefore as He would be directly begotten of God, His mother, in the nature of the case should be virgin. It is the prophecy that our Lord Jesus Christ should be virgin born, Son of God and God the Son.

Thus away back in that far dream of a Babylonian king, God the Almighty stamped in the midst of the symbols, in the story of the image, the foredetermined and amazing fact of the *virgin birth*.

The falling of the stone.

The stone should fall upon the feet of the image and break it to pieces.

The falling of the stone is the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ.

Is the falling of the stone the symbol of His *first* Coming, as it is so taught by some?

To answer that question I will ask another:

When our Lord Jesus Christ came the first time did He fall upon the Roman Empire, overthrow it and break it in pieces? Nay! on the contrary, the Roman government at the instigation of the Jewish Sanhedrin fell on Him and nailed Him to a cross. He was so despised and rejected of men, His own nation so refused to own or accept Him as King, that God the Father took Him to His own right hand in Heaven where for two thousand years He has been seated as an exile from His own land and throne.

He did not fall upon the feet of the image when He came the first time.

Has He, as some teach, during this time of His absence in Heaven, set up His kingdom on earth; and has this kingdom consumed and set aside all the other kingdoms of the earth?

Is he now ruling over a world universally surrendered to Him, singing His name in praise and walking in the ways of righteousness and peace?

The kingdom of Christ here!

The kingdoms of this world become the kingdoms of our Lord and His Christ!

Christ reigning and ruling in all lands and owned _of all men as the authoritative Prince of Peace!

How can men have the hardihood, the blindness of soul and the deafness of spirit even to suggest such propositions when every gale that comes across the sea brings the sound of battle and the shout of contending foes?

The kingdom of Christ here! or, the slightest hint or shadowy indication that it is enlarging, expanding with growing power and all compelling word! How can men find it in their hearts to proclaim such things in the ears of men when capital and labor are in daily conflict; when lawlessnesses are multiplied, when crime and violence are on the increase; when there is distress of nations and perplexity; when the people are tossing and rushing with the unrest of the seas; when the Church is divided; when sects spring up like the weeds of the field, each sect with a doctrine in the name of Christ which contradicts or antagonizes the other; so that, since the hour when Christ offered the prayer that His disciples might be “one,” (See John 17:11,21,22) the prayer was never so far from being answered and never seemed so hopeless; when infidelity is multiplied and men in the pulpit openly deny the incarnation of Christ, His bodily resurrection and refuse to accept the Bible as the inspired, the infallible Word of God!

To talk and teach that the kingdom of Christ is here, that it came when Christ first came, that His first coming was the falling of the stone—may well lead anyone familiar with Holy Scripture to ask whence comes the inspiration to such teaching.

But there is *one fact* which overwhelmingly confutes these follies and rebukes the excuselessness of the errors, the fact which demonstrates the kingdom has not been set up, *that the stone has not fallen.*

And this is the fact:

When the stone falls it is to smite upon the ten toes of the image and break it in pieces; and as the ten toes represent ten kings and their kingdoms, the ten kings and *the ten kingdoms must be politically existing when Christ comes.* In addition to that, they must be organized and confederated under the supreme or eleventh king represented by the head of gold.

No such political conditions existed when our Lord Jesus Christ came the first time.

They have never existed at any time since He left the world.

They do not exist today.

And as the Coming of Christ is to smash these kings and overwhelm them with their blasphemous head before the kingdom can be set up then not only has the kingdom of Christ never been set up, but the falling of the stone does *not* represent the *first* Coming of Christ.

If the falling of the stone does not represent the first Coming of Christ (and it does not, and cannot) then the falling of the stone is the divine symbol of our Lord's *Second Coming* to set up the *fifth* and final world power, the fifth and final and *eternal kingdom.*

And mark how He is coming.

Not silently as when the dawn steals over the night; not as when the kiss of love is pressed upon the lips; not as when the fragrance of a flower is borne on the air, but, *as when a stone is flung* from the hand and comes crashingly down, *smiting and breaking, crushing and destroying* that on which it falls.

He is coming to smite the image on its feet.

He is coming to smite the ten confederate kings.

He is coming to overthrow the colossal, the Devil-inspired combination and lay the golden head in the dust.

He is coming where these kings and their armies shall be gathered, and where this golden head shall exalt himself in wanton bravado against the God of heaven and against His Christ.

They will be gathered at Jerusalem.

Hear what God has said, and what He will do:

“For I will gather all nations (that is the ten nations) against Jerusalem to battle . . .” (Zech. 14:2)

“I will also gather all nations, and will bring them down into the valley of Jehoshaphat . . .” (Joel 3:2)

Our Lord will come to Jerusalem to meet this gathering of the nations.

He will destroy the armies of the king.

He will cast him and his prime minister, the false prophet, into the lake of fire.

Then will He set up that kingdom which shall never be destroyed, that fifth and final kingdom which shall never be destroyed, concerning which, if the Lord should tarry, I shall speak to you on the coming Lord's day night.

From all this I learn:

God's forecast of world politics is now being fulfilled, and every fulfilling event is the daily demonstration that this book, the Bible, is the fully inspired, inerrant Word of God.

Stand with me here in Babylon and look down the sweep of twenty-five hundred years of human history foreseen and forecast of God.

Through the lips of His prophet He said the Persians should come and overthrow Babylon.

And there on time, some forty years later, comes Cyrus with the silver corsleted Persians. He enters the golden city and claims it as his own.

God, in His unfailing Word, said the Greeks should come, trample the Persian host beneath their feet.

Behold Alexander at the head of his brazen-coated Greeks, plunging through the waters of the Granicus and enthroning himself here at Babylon as the master of the world.

God the Lord said Rome should be the great world conqueror.

Behold it rising from its seven hills, stretching out its grasp upon the nations, peoples, kindreds and tongues, till everywhere is heard the tramp of the iron legions and the shouts of victory.

And we have reached *this* hour.

In this hour, the culmination of all that has gone before, all the nations and peoples who once formed the Roman Empire are at war with one another.

Over the sounds of conflict the ominous words of the Son of God sound more ominous than ever:

"Nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom." (Matt. 24:7; Mark 13:8; Luke 21:10)

The "clay" is beginning to make itself known.

The people are full of murmuring and discontent.

The spirit of revolt is in the air.

The people are sick of kings and dynasties.

Presently there will be national upheavals.

Kings will lose their crowns.

The form of a government will be changed in a day.

The cry will be democracy against autocracy.

The people will break the bands of centuries and cast aside the cords of custom.

Democracies will move to the threshold of anarchy.

License will offer a bribe to liberty.

Everywhere there will be the need of iron hands.

These conditions are already in travail.

The birth throes are giving their pains and the sense of woe is in the body politic.

The shadow of iron men is falling even while the people in their unrest talk of freedom.

The way is being prepared for remaking the map of Europe and Asia.

Out of the new making must come sooner or later, the ordained and fatal ten.

Over all is the shadow of the great world head.

As the conflict deepens, as conditions become complex men talk more openly about the necessity of

concentrating powers. Whether in commerce, in trade, in politics or the prosecution of war.

The people while they demand liberty on the one side, are calling for men who can unify their wishes, execute their will, and yet do it with authority, personalism and power that in other days would have been called absolutism of government, usurpation of privilege.

Deeper and darker grows the shadow of the great world Head, the shadow of that Devil-begotten man who is the forerunner of the Christ, the imitation king of kings and lord of lords—the *Anti-christ*—the world's last Kaiser or Cæsar.

Every day the events of the day are fulfilling the forecast, and the warning of God.

Every thunder of cannon, every shriek of shell, every groan of the wounded, and moan of the dying, all the unrest, the fear and the quivering uncertainty paralyzing men and nations are crying aloud in our ears if we will but hear it.

“Fulfilled! Fulfilled!”

Because all the downsweep of history, all the combination and move of circumstances are proclaiming this prophetic word to be the Word of God; and because every day the words of Daniel to the Babylonian king are being echoed and re-echoed in the march of events, “. . . the dream is certain, and the interpretation thereof sure” (Dan. 2:45), because all the signs of the times indicate that the way is being rapidly prepared for the rise of the ten kings, the revival of the Roman Empire, the appearance and exaltation of the man of sin; because all such signs indicate that the great day when the Son of God shall appear in glory and like the stone flung down upon the image will come to smite all that is opposed to Him, to execute wrath and judgment upon all who are not in union and fellowship with Him; and because, as I have taught you consistently through these sermons that before our Lord appears as King He will descend into the air and call His Church up to meet Him; because He is coming as the Bridegroom for His Bride, for the real, the true, the genuine and regenerated part of the professing Church; and because He might come for her at any moment; because between us and that solemn event there is not the thickness of the vapor that floats above the morning hills, I appeal to you who are professing Christians that you make your calling and election sure.

There is something more required of you than to say: “I believe,” be baptized, join church, have your name on the church book and pay your pew rent or contribution:

There are “. . . things that *accompany* salvation. . .” (Heb. 6:9)

You are called to turn your back on the old way, to live the life that is new and sweet and clean; to walk in the highway of holiness, of righteousness and truth; to ascend to the plane of spiritual experience and translate the life of Christ in daily character to the sons of men.

A Christian is one who seeks to walk in fellowship with God and make His Son the Master of his days. “For Christ’s sake” he will do the one thing, and “for Christ’s sake” he will refuse to do the other. “For to me to live is Christ” will be his watchword, (See. Phil. 1:21) his inspiration and the impulse of every hour. He may stumble, he may fall, but he will not lie still; if the root of the matter be in him he will arise and go forward with renewed determination to live the Christian life.

I shall never forget what I once saw when a Christian much provoked in a sudden flash of anger at the unjust attitude of another; uttered on oath, and the unbeliever who had so greatly tried him said, “That is fine, and you are a Christian too.” But the Christian who had spoken so unadvisedly, so profanely with his lips turned to the man who had been so mocking, so pitiless, and with actual tears staining his cheek replied, “What I have just said has broken my heart, not because you think of me as you do, but because I should have done so evil a thing. God knows I love my Lord with all my heart. Forgive me that I may have led you to think lightly of His Name, even for a moment.”

What a background that was! black enough to be sure, but a background on which that careless and most provoking unbeliever could read in the light of penitent tears and in the evidence of genuine heart-ache that this stumbling Christian taken unaware was a Christian not only in name but in fact.

You will make mistakes. We all do, because that old nature bequeathed from Adam is still within us and seeks to assault us when off our guard; but, if the divine life be there in you, you will hate the sin, confess it and call on God to lift you more and more above the flesh, and more and more to fill you with His Holy Spirit, with His power

and grace. Nothing will keep you back. Like the apostle you will forget the things that are behind. You will press on in spite of every hindrance to the shining mark, the goal of constant fellowship and unbroken communion with your Lord. You will repudiate each weakness and snatch victory from defeat.

If you do not love the things of God; if you do not care for the House of God and the exercise of prayer; if you prefer the world and the ways of the world; if your heart is set on the pleasures it offers and you are determined to drink of its cups at any cost to the profession you make; if with all this indifference, this unrestrained carelessness to the claims of Christ and the manner and fashion in which those who wear His name should walk, you still keep that name and allow the breath of scandal to breathe upon it and the mire of worldliness to stain it, then I exhort you to arouse and satisfy yourself, and others as well as yourself, whether the profession you make is but an empty sound on a careless tongue; or, whether the life of the risen Christ be really in you, slight and unmanifested though it may be.

You have no time to lose.

If the Lord should come and you be left outside, revealed to all the world as no more than an idle professor your fate of all would be the worst; for, I read that such will be cast out into outer darkness where there shall be weeping and wailing and gnashing of teeth.

Make your calling and election sure tonight.

Do not wait for tomorrow.

And now to you, the unsaved.

Unsaved!

What a word is that.

And what does it mean to be unsaved?

It means to miss union and fellowship with Christ.

It means to miss communion with the sweetest and tenderest man who ever lived. It means to miss the touch of the power that healed the sick and quickened the dead. It means to miss all that makes life worth living in this world; all that can give strength in weakness, joy in sorrow, hope in despair; all that can make life to be more than mere existence, brute-being and limited self-consciousness.

It means to be blind, so blind you cannot see the wonder and the beauty of the landscape and Him who painted it.

It means to be deaf, so deaf you cannot hear the symphony nor the song the spirit sings in trusting souls.

It means to be dumb, as dumb as the man who has great whelming, surging thoughts within his soul and cannot speak them. So dumb you cannot speak the word of faith.

It means to be half-paralyzed, and only that alive in you which is not worth the living by itself—the animal, the brute innate in you and in all men.

It means to be dead, dead as the man wrapped in the shroud, dead, spiritually dead, without God, without Christ, and without hope in the world.

What hope has any man outside the Bible and the Christ of God?

What do you know of the beyond?

Are you a fool of fools?

Are you willing to stand on the edge of eternity as it crumbles under your feet?

Are you willing to stand there and liable to go any moment?

In eternity and unsaved!

Unsaved! Forsaken of God at last.

Listen! What does it mean to be forsaken of God?

It has been defined in the most tremendous words that ever came from human lips; that cry on the cross:

“ . . . My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?” (Matt. 27:46; Mark 15:34; Ps. 22:1)

It is the cry of God's Christ.

He died on that cross as a sacrifice for sin. He died as a substitute for the believer. He was forsaken of God that the believer might never be forsaken.

If you do not believe, if you do not accept Him, you will be forsaken, and the cry of agony will be your cry.

To be forsaken of God!

The Lord Himself has endeavored to tell us what it means.

He has told us of the rich man in hell. (See Luke 16:19-31)

He could not get a drop of water for his parched tongue.

He could not send a warning to his five brethren that he might keep them from the place of torment.

Between him and the rest beyond there was a great gulf fixed, bottomless, measureless, without a bridge.

He had only two things.

The memory of the good things he had left *behind* him.

The certainty of a hopeless, endless future *before* him.

O man, to be unsaved! Think of it!

To take your soul into eternity without a guarantee.

You may have wealth, you may have an income of a million a year. You may live for fifty years and in perfect health, drink of every joy, gratify every desire, then die and leave your millions to some fool to squander.

The body will be put in the ground. It will moulder. It will decay to dust but your soul! Ah! There are things in the soul that hurt us. The pain, the regret, the anguish in a soul last up to the final second, to the last breath; and in some souls have been more intense than in all the preceding years.

What is the logic of that?

It is simple enough. It is the truth that your body may wither, die, but your soul will continue, and continue to suffer.

O man! if the race for wealth, your desire for the things of earth have kept you away from God and Christ; if your social relations and ambitions have made you put Christ aside you will go into eternity an empty soul, a beggar of beggars. All you have accomplished, all you may have achieved in the world will but serve to make your sorrow and suffering the greater.

O man, man, unsaved! You have no right to face such a failure.

You have no right to imperil your soul.

The memory of happiness fled.

The certainty of sorrow forever.

Where are you going to spend your eternity—and how?

In all the universe of God there is no question so important as that.

The mothers of some of you men are in yonder Heaven.

You have no right to go back upon the prayers their faith breathed out to God for you.

You have no right to fling back the love of God, deny His Son, trample on His grace and destroy your soul.

You can be saved now.

The work has been done.

There is nothing to do but receive and believe in a crucified and risen Lord, as it is written:

"That if thou shalt confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, and shalt believe in thine heart that God hath raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved." (Rom. 10:9)

He is coming. *When*, we know not.

The time is short, the days of grace are passing.

If you die as an unbeliever before Christ comes, you are lost forever.

If Christ comes before you die while you are an unbeliever you are lost forever.

On the edge of the grave on the threshold of our Lord's imminent coming you are lost now.

I call upon you. I call upon every man and woman in this house tonight to accept Jesus Christ as your personal Saviour, *get under the blood of the cross*. The blood He shed for such as you; get on the side of eternal salvation, security, and peace.

Get there now lest He come, and it be too late!

X. THE THOUSAND YEARS AND AFTER

The Thousand Years and After

MY theme is:

“The wonderful government God has promised to set up on the earth in which every problem of capital and labor, wealth and poverty, war and peace, health and disease, life and death will be perfectly and forever solved.”

The texts are three in number. (Revelation 20:4, Micah 4:3,4, Revelation 21:1)

“... they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years.”

“... and they shall beat their swords into plowshares, and their spears into pruninghooks: nation shall not lift up a sword against nation, neither shall they learn war any more.

“But they shall sit every man under his vine and under his fig tree; and none shall make them afraid: ...”

“And I saw a new heaven and a new earth: ...”

Human life is the most colossal failure in the universe of God.

In all the universe of God there is nothing equal to this failure.

This failure is indicated and marked by four amazing characteristics—*brevity, uncertainty, mystery and inadequacy*.

The *brevity* is measured by seventy years as the *official* term of life.

Out of these seventy you must take twenty that the individual may reach majority; out of the fifty, you must

take ten for the finding of a place in life; out of the forty, ten years more in which to achieve possible success; out of the remaining thirty, you must give one-half to sleep, to eating and drinking, and probable sickness; of the final fifteen, five years must be allotted for steps down the slant of life to the grave.

Ten years of actual, possible living.

And what are ten years? What is a decade? What are seventy years to the centuries and the ages gone, or the ages to come?

O, it is brevity, indeed.

And in such brevity, what is your life?

It is a vapor, (See James 4:14) a mist above the morning hills, a bubble on the tide, the spume of a broken wave, a touch of the lips, a pressure of the hands, a sigh, the last notes of a song, a tale that is told; it is the flying of a bird out of the night through an open window across a banquet hall with its light, its warmth, its clink of glass, the laughter and song, and out again through an open window into the night once more, the whirl of a wing, a flash—and gone.

O, it is brief, this life of yours and mine.

If it be brief, it is *uncertain*.

David, the king, said, “. . . there is but a step between me and death.” (1 Sam. 20:3)

He was wrong. There is only the beat of your heart. Here! let me put my finger on my pulse, *one, two, three*. I listen to my heart. I feel the thud of it here, striking under my ear. Let it stop!—gone.

A man and his wife sat at a table under the shade of the evening lamp, in the quiet of the home.

He reached round and asked her to give him one of the new books from the rack. She passed it to him, remarking, she was sure he would like it.

He answered kindly and loyally:

“You have read it. If you liked it, I know I will.”

There was silence between them.

Then, after a while, she asked, and naturally:

“What do you think of it?”

There was no answer.

After a little longer silence, she said, calling him by his name:

“I really believe you are asleep.”

Still he made no answer.

Somewhat annoyed, she arose and looked at him.

He was asleep.

But it was that sleep, from which no man could wake him.

The eyes were open, the book was in his grasp, but, he had gone.

Over there in France where they put a criminal to death they do not tell him the hour of his execution.

There he lies asleep, across his narrow, iron bed.

The gray light of the early morning comes filtering in through the bars of his cell.

He is dreaming, dreaming of the days of boyhood and the hours of innocence, some far away sunny day when he played in poppy-filled field or loitered by the murmuring brook. Suddenly he feels a hand laid on his shoulder. He awakes with a start to confront the stern gaze of silent men. Then they announce his appeal has been rejected. There is one imperative word spoken, “Come.” He arises and follows. There outside the prison door is the hideous, red thing that will take his life.

That is just your case.

You are under sentence of death.

You do not know the hour.

You are here tonight full of your plans and ambitions.

Any moment the hand may be laid on you, the voice may bid you come; and a week from now you may be under the sod, the wheel of time rolling over your grave and the place that knows you now knowing you no more forever.

Uncertain is your life.

If it be brief, if it be uncertain, it is a *mystery*.

The scholar of Baliol has said, "The dust the summer winds waft hither, are not more dead to *whence* and *wither*?"

Whence did we come?

From some seed flung down by a swift passing world, or from a drop of protoplasmic matter that through long and weary ages evolved a snake, a serpent, a lizard, then anthropoid ape, a brutal beast of a man?

Did we come from above or below?

Have we fallen down or fallen up?

What *are* we?

Are we mud or mind, matter or spirit, angel or devil?

What are these floating, fragmentary, reminiscent things in us, the sound of a song, a laugh, the glimpse of a landscape, the babble of a stream over its stones, half felt emotions and blurred concepts? Are they the left-over things from a former existence?

Is there any real, actual *personality* in us we may honestly call our own? How many individualities of past generations are struggling in us? Is our personality the concrete, or the multiplication of other personalities; so that, sometimes in a dozen moments a dozen different persons seem to be in us; or, we seem to be these different and distinctive persons?

Have we a soul, after all, or is the soul nothing more than a function of a material construction, and when the construction is broken up by death the function at an end?

Whither do we go?

When I die, when I breathe my last breath shall I step into an unseen chariot and be swept upward to the open gates flung wide to welcome me to the inviting and longed-for city of peace and joy; or, when I die, does the bell ring, the curtain drop, the footlights go out, the play over—the house empty—night and silence?

Oh, listen. I listen, and all I can hear is the splash of a tear or the sound of the clods as they fall on the coffin lid.

Over all is the abiding question:

"To BE, or NOT to BE?"

And the question is always followed by—a *Guess*.

Brevity, uncertainty, mystery and crowning all—

Inadequacy.

Ask a man who has lived seventy years, who has arrived, who has achieved something in life, whether he is satisfied; whether all he has put into his years of effort and toil finds its compensation in his success. He will smile at you. We know more at twenty than we do at seventy. A man has to live many years to find out how little he knows, how little he can know.

You have read, perhaps, that story of Balzac, the "Peau de Chagrin." A man found a wild ass's skin. It enabled him to obtain his wish; but each time a wish was granted the skin shrank, and when the last wish was accorded, it shrivelled up.

You have to pay for what you achieve. It costs tremendously. Your soul shrinks, your mind shrinks and your body shrinks. You pay out your soul, your mind, your body. You give away your life forces. That is the reason why men who have achieved things have wrinkled foreheads and bent bodies. They are a mass of quivering nerves. Their bodies are like torture chambers. They are full of anguish and pain.

Tell me, does this effort, the labor of mind and body, the heart ache, the lamentation, the tragedy pay for what you get out of life; for the suffering, the intensity? Ah, some of us have lived a million years in a moment. In that moment was concentrated all there is of feeling, experience, the innermost of damnation.

Does it pay?

But, I am speaking of the man who has succeeded.

Look at the great mass.

They are like dumb driven cattle, like galley slaves chained to the oar, pulling at the oar but making no progress.

They have nothing. They have no home, nor even a piece of ground to be buried in. They live from hand to mouth. They are whip-lashed by necessity. They have no hope. There is no light in their countenance. They are like machines wound up. At last a cog breaks, or a wheel, something falls out of place, they go to pieces and are cast aside like a lot of scrap into the dump heap of dust we call the grave.

Nor is this all. Men are filled with passions, with appetites; and these passions and appetites leap upon them like wolves, like wild beasts. Men hate them, cry out against them and then, follow them, yield to them, shiveringly obey them as rod-smitten bond slaves.

Nor even, is this all. Men do not die as the day dies, softly, but again and again with agony, fearing to die; but because of their sufferings cursing each moment they do not die.

Look about you, look upon the world, a world full of agony, of tragedy and unspeakable anguish in body, soul, mind, and tell me that this is the best and most perfect life; tell me that human life is a triumphant success; be brave, honest and independent of convention and speak the truth.

The incompleteness of life mechanically is daily demonstrated.

You use a telescope and boast of it, but you use it because your eyes fall short in vision. You use a telephone because your voice will not carry. You have rapid transit to overcome the slowness of your natural locomotion. Every surgeon, every physician is a protest against the failure of the body; every teacher is a testimony to the need of the mind; every act of legislation, all the efforts at reform are protests on the part of man against his present condition.

All these bear witness that human life is not complete, that in so far as its incompleteness it is a failure.

And the failure of life individually is emphasized by its failure governmentally.

The record of human government is the record of battle, bloody tyranny and oppression, tragedy and lamentation, murdered men, violated women, orphaned children, ruined cities, monuments overturned, fields scorched with fire, civilization destroyed; the history of the world is the history of one civilization after another destroyed. At this present moment fifteen or twenty of the foremost nations of the earth are leaping at each other's throats gorging themselves with one another's blood. All the genius and science of man is engaged in inventing instruments of destruction. The victory is reckoned by the number of the enemy killed, wounded, maimed or made prisoners. Each is seeking to do the other the greater harm. Each is looking over the trench at the other in the hope the other will starve and agonize. And if tonight the world should end the angels of God would look eastward in horror at Ypres, La Chapelle, the Somme, Verdun and the battlefields of the South and East and say, "there human government went down in blood and shame."

If peace should now be made it could not abide. It would only be the prelude to fiercer conflict.

England could not demobilize. An English admiral has said if Germany had moved by sea and land upon England at the beginning, England was so unprepared, so defenseless she would have been at the feet of Germany and her vassal for a hundred years. England just came too near to disaster to disband her army now.

France was too near being caught and held at Calais to set aside her heroic and self-devoted army.

Russia has learned that no matter how many millions of men she may have they are of no avail without artillery and guns, plentiful ammunition and strict discipline.

Germany after nearly three years of war in which she has been able to keep the invaders' feet from off her soil, feels herself justified in the forty years' preparation that gave her at the outset the best guns and gives her today the present strength in organization, in generalship and power. Germany cannot disband that army which so far

has been a rampart of steel against which the Allies have dashed in vain.

But admit for the sake of argument the nations should disarm and peace be declared, the Word of the living God has said that at the very time when they shall say peace and safety sudden destruction shall come upon them as travail upon a woman with child and they shall not escape; and over all is heard the words of the Son of God declaring that to the end wars and desolations are determined; that till He Himself returns there will be wars and rumors of wars, that nation shall rise against nation.

Admit that peace will be made, it could not be permanent.

The need and the law of expansion among the nations would make it impossible.

Germany must expand. She feels her need to push eastward and to the Persian Gulf. Should she do so she would be at the back door of India and this would cut the British Empire in two. She would be a barricade in the way of Russia to that Constantinople she has coveted for centuries. Germany must expand upon the sea. Within the last ten or fifteen years she has shown her ability to compete in the markets of the world and her "Made in Germany" was a challenge and an issue with every nation. Should she expand her marine she would menace the supremacy of England on the sea, and when the supremacy of England on the sea is set aside she is shorn of her power and sooner or later would be cut loose from her "little lions," her colonies across the seas. Should the North Sea become in reality the German Sea, should Germany obtain control of the English Channel it would be English no longer and France would be reduced to a province.

In the nature of the case the effort at expansion made on the part of each nation would require the support and need of armies to enforce and sustain it.

But let it be said that disarmament remains and war upon the battlefield is at an end, there will be seen rising on the horizon that immense and spectre-like thing we call the social revolution.

At noontide look upward to the sky. There it is like the blue dome of an infinite temple. The sun is hanging in the midst like a scintillating censer and pouring forth the wealth of its golden light. The mountains rise in the distance like the altars of the gods. The valleys are like laps of bounty, the rivers stretch like silver harp-strings to the sea. The sea thunders back its diapason and pours its foam-fringed waves like "kneeling worshippers" upon the shore. The forests range over hill and dale like unbroken ranks of marching armies, the waters of river and lake and sea are full of fish, the woods are full of game, there is land everywhere in richness and beauty, land enough and room enough for every man to have a home and gratify his every natural and implanted need.

And yet, it is not so.

It is today as it always has been. The few are rich, the many are poor. In spite of all protest against the phrase, nevertheless it is true, the rich grow richer and the poor poorer.

In olden times when the multitude began to murmur they gave them corn ships, distributed bread to the hungry or gave them public shows to entertain them and turn their minds away from their straitened Circumstances and their discontent; and when this would not satisfy the rulers fomented foreign wars and sent the people out to the slaughter pens of battle that the ranks of insubordination and revolt might be thinned.

But that will not do now.

Education is universal. Knowledge is cheap, the means of it at every hand and many run to and fro. The peoples of every clime visit each other, mingle and mix. What is known at one end of the earth is known at the other. Everywhere the Gospel of discontent is preached by word, by written article, by picture, by speaking cartoons and moving film.

A man buys a cheap chromo, the copy of a masterpiece. As he stands before it he asks himself why he should not possess the original as well as another. He sees a car go by, the father and mother lying back soft-cushioned in luxury with their pampered child. He looks down at his own boy covered with grime bending to work as he did and his fathers before him and a frown wrinkles his brow, it deepens, and he gives a fiercer turn to his knife-blade as he sharpens it on the revolving stone.

Before the war the socialistic discontent began to mutter in the German Reichstag. It made itself felt in the laboring class in England. It gave sabotage to France. It was a rising and deepening tide in this country. The laborer, the wage-earner, took on a sullen and resentful mien and sought more than equality with the employer, ownership and mastery were seen to be the brooding and fermenting ideas. They have grown lawlessly independent. No man

is so independent and insufferable as the employee who has nothing. His independent manner and his incivility are his asset, as he thinks, of liberty, of freedom. The demand is for higher wages, shorter hours, less work. Let the war stop tomorrow and this socialistic demand, this spirit of revolt against capital will rise and sweep all before it and instead of national we shall have social and industrial war. The Word of God in solemn warning tells us the rich are "heaping" their treasures together for the last times that it may be seized and squandered by the mob. (See James 5:3)

But, let it be said the social republic is established, it cannot abide in peace.

It is doomed by the basic law of human life. That law is self-interest. Self-interest is a magnificent factor in human history. It levels the mountains, fills up the valleys, builds cities and changes the wilderness into fruitful fields. The thing which will send you men out to mingle in the swirl and rush and tide of life tomorrow will be this impelling factor of self-interest.

It has been the secret of human achievement, but it carries its penalty, the penalty of the impingement of personality upon personality. The strength of a man is in ratio to his personality. If your personality is actual and of avail you will resent anything that seeks to hinder or undervalue it. You will resent even a frown of disapproval as an assault upon that individualism. You will not tolerate it; and it is this intensity of personalism as the expression of self-interest that strikes against other personalisms and produces conflict. Here is a man who is a laborer. He becomes a walking delegate. He exercises authority over others. He becomes a contractor, then a grafter (the transition is easy) then a capitalistic oppressor. Others revolt and the conflict is on.

And there is no hope of changing the outcome.

No matter how far you may project human life the end of every proposition and scheme for abiding human peace and personal satisfaction will be a failure unless you can change the constitution of man himself.

Unless you can make one man set up the personality of another and consider it and its interests before his own; unless you can make him an entirely new creature (and this is impossible by evolution), no matter how far you may project human life it must end in failure.

No matter how far you may culture the individual you can never eliminate these fundamental characteristics: *brevity, uncertainty, mystery and inadequacy*.

No matter how far you may project the line of human government, whether autocracy, aristocracy, oligarchy, monarchy, democracy, at the end is—failure.

Think of it, *brevity, uncertainty, mystery, inadequacy, war, famine, pestilence, poverty, disease, agony, suffering, suffering of body, and soul and mind, death, the grave and—silence*.

Would you dare to stand up and tell me in the face of all that, in the face of this phantasmagoria that human life and the experiment of human self government have been a success?

Nay! They have been a colossal failure.

The cause of this failure is twofold.

Primarily, because man refused to fulfil the purpose of God concerning Him.

God purposed to make man His vicegerent, His representative incarnation.

The one condition: man should surrender himself to the personality of God, allow God to become enthroned in him.

Had he done so he would not have been through all these long ages a mere animal working with tools, but a god who should have commanded and it would have been done; he should have spoken and it would have stood fast. Instead of belonging to the chain gang of labor, earning his bread in the sweat of his brow, he would have been a prince upon his throne, his royal sceptre his slightest will.

God never meant man to be a toiling slave. He never meant him to be dependent on secondary means. He meant him to move and act as the Man of Nazareth. When He came to the waters of the lake He just stepped upon them and not a drop touched the arches of His instep as He walked like one upon the motionless mosaic of a marble floor.

But man listened to his own self-consciousness.

He was taken up with himself.

He would be the god of this world and unaided of any other personality than his own.

He turned his back upon God and became an intellectual and immoral animal.

The second and instrumental cause of man's action and resultant fall and failure was the entrance into and the impact of an immense personality upon the world.

That personality we call the serpent, the Devil and Satan. *Serpent* because of his sinuous, silent and gliding way, everywhere distilling and infusing his poison; *Devil* that is, slanderer and, therefore, liar; *Satan*, that means, adversary, hinderer, rebel. He is the opposite of God's positive. He is the emphasized negative. He is *not* holy. He is *not* pure. He is *not* righteous. He is *not* good. He is *not* truth. He is *not anything* God is or likes. He is night to morning, darkness to light, evil to good.

He whispered to man that man was in no need of being in leading strings to any superior God; he had in himself all the elements, all the requirement, all the endowment sufficient to enable him to make the world his own and rule it as God.

Man entered into partnership with the Devil, became his enthronement instead of the enthronement of God. He became the Devil's dupe and slave. For six thousand years he has led man into the debauchery of brutism, self-gratification and sin, into idolatry, false religion, and unbelief.

Full of self-consciousness and self-exaltation man has endeavored to regain the place from which he fell. All his inventions have been an expression of his determination to be the god and master of nature and thus the *god of the world*; but all his inventions have been and are but crutches revealing his shortage and descent from original power.

In spite of his partnership with the Devil, that partnership which the Son of God recognized when He said to men, ". . . but this is *your hour*, and the *power of darkness*," (or, literally the potentate of darkness); (Luke 22:53) in spite of all the efforts he has made, seemingly at times almost superhuman, he has failed and every hour only evidences he must fail.

He is a *dethroned* god under the ban, and has no power now to reach the place, *by any effort of his own*, that might have been his.

He is a failure.

A colossal failure.

But when God is rejected upon one plane of His purpose He always (speaking after the manner of men) rises to a higher.

When the natural man whom He created refused to walk in partnership with Him, He brought into view that purpose which He had purposed from unbegun eternity, His purpose concerning the earth. Whatever may have been His purpose in detail in the creation of other worlds I do not know. The Psalmist has told us in general terms. He says the heavens declare the glory of God and the expanse sheweth His handiwork. (See Ps. 19:1)

The Omnipotence of God is told out in yonder sky in the terms of suns and nebulae and systems, and in every coruscation of light that breaks like foaming waves on shores of countless universes; but this world of ours is one of the most insignificant of all. He did not create it as the supreme expression of His omnipotence. It does show omnipotence in every pebble on the shore, in every blade of grass as well as lifted mountain range, but He did not create it for that. He created it that it might be the *arena for the revelation of His love*, that it might be *the revelation of His heart*.

He anticipated the creation and the fall of man and purposed to send His Son into this world to become the incarnate redeemer and saviour of men. He ordained the place of the cross and the hour of His death thereon.

In the fullness of time He came. In coordination with the Father and the Spirit He formed for Himself a human nature from the seed and cell of a virgin woman. At the appointed moment He went to His death. He offered Himself as a sacrifice for sin. He arose. He ascended. He sits in yonder Heaven the eternal God-man. God and man, two natures, human and divine, in one body and one person forever, the Second Man, the new Adam, the spiritual Head of the race, able to give new and spiritual life to men.

For two thousand years an immense spiritual gestation has been going on. There has been forming in this world as a babe is formed under the bosom of the expectant mother, a spiritual body. That body is the Church. By the Church I do not mean the great professing system of Christianity, but the true, the genuine Church of which we

are members who by faith in Christ crucified and risen have been made partakers of His life, His nature, and indwelt by the Holy Spirit are linked up to His risen and glorified body in Heaven. Each member of this body is a son of God in embryo.

Like the gestation of a human body the spiritual body will have its birth hour. That birth hour will be at the Coming of our Lord Jesus Christ. He is Coming as King, as Lord of lords, as the God of the whole earth; but before He comes as such He will descend softly, silently as the Head of the Body into the air. He will raise the dead who have died in His name. He will transfigure the living who are His. He will gather them to Himself and take them temporarily into the upper and golden city.

As soon as this birth takes place then will be seen the acceleration of that other and terrible gestation which has been going on since the beginning of the fall.

From the beginning of human history there have been but two men in the sight of God, the First man and the Last, Adam and Christ; so, have there been but two seeds, the seed of the woman and the seed of the serpent.

The seed of the woman is the Christ of God, *Christ the Head* and *Christ the Body*, the Church.

The seed of the serpent is the natural man and this system we call "the world." Through the ages this system has been developing in sin, in animalism, in idolatry, in philosophy, science and unbelief.

After the departure of the Church it will develop with amazing rapidity along lines of government and blasphemous repudiation of God and His Christ.

I have told you in preceding sermons that twenty-five hundred years ago God gave the rulership of the world to the Gentile nations occupying the territory from Scotland to the Euphrates, from Germany to Africa; that this rule was ordained to, and did, descend through the four great empires, Babylon, Medo-Persia, Greece and Rome; that Rome should be the last Gentile world power; that in the closing hours of this age Rome should be revived under the form of ten democratic kings, five in what was once the western empire and five in the eastern; that this revival and division would come about, not only by war, but by the uprising of the people who should elect the kings; that due to the state of anarchy more or less ruling throughout the territory a mystic person continually foretold in Scripture should arise and become the accepted head of these kings and kingdoms, taking His place as King of kings and Lord of lords; that he should be the last Kaiser; that he is the man of sin, a pro Christ, an *Alter Christus*.

When the mask is off and the features seen we know him. He is the *Devil's Son*, the *Devil's man*, the fulfilment of the Devil's long ambition and aim. He and the revived Roman Empire are the *consummation* of the *gestation of sin*. He and the empire stand in contrast to Christ and His Church. This political combination, this confederation of kings is the system, the *evil body* in which, and this man the *evil head* through whom, the Devil finds his way to imitate the incarnation of God's Son and by this great counterfeit become the accepted God of the world.

He, the Devil's man, will restore the Jews to their own land. He will set up, as you have heard, the Jewish State. He will offer himself to, and be accepted by, the Jews as their political, if not real Messiah.

He will make a treaty with them for seven years. At the end of three years and a half he will break the treaty. Under the hardening judgments of God he will become their persecutor. He will bring in the Great Tribulation which the Lord has said will be unparalleled in its horror. The world never saw anything like it before, and never shall again.

In his madness, a demonized man, Devil-filled and Devil-crazed he will rush with his army to Jerusalem. Like Julian of old he will seek at one fell blow to wipe out and destroy every remaining tradition of Christianity. He will seat himself in the temple he has permitted the Jews to rebuild. He will declare man to be the highest expression of the God idea in the universe. He will claim to be the *super man*, above all other men and the perfect and final representation of the God idea. He will oppose all other idea of God. He will show himself that he is God. He will set up his image, his effigy. He will set it on the battlements, that is, the pinnacles of the temple in full view of the people. He will demand that men shall pay homage to it; not in a mere, vulgar, coarse, idolatrous way, but as an expression of their faith in him and their belief in the deity of man.

In worshipping him, they will be exalting humanity in themselves.

Now will come the fulfilment of the promise and prophecy made in Eden.

It was affirmed the serpent should bruise the heel of the woman's seed and the seed of the woman should bruise the serpent's head.

The serpent with his seed or system did bruise the heel of the woman's seed, there at the cross.

Our Lord Jesus Christ, even though God the Son, God of God, and very God of very God, was clothed with a humanity in which He could die. While it is true He offered Himself as a sacrifice for sin; while it is true no one took His life from Him; while it is true He dismissed His own spirit, His human spirit, and thus *acted* in dying, yet as He made use of the instrumentality of the men who crucified Him; so, in some mysterious way He made use of the Devil of whom it is said he had "the power of death," (See Heb. 2:14) and thus at His own determination and will was *bruised* by the serpent.

The hour is coming when He will bruise the head of the serpent, that head and front of offending who is none other than the man of sin, the Anti-Christ.

I have told you the Lord is Coming as the stone cut out of the mountains without hands which fell upon the feet of the image and broke it in pieces.

He is Coming to Jerusalem to overthrow this man and his blasphemous and political confederation.

I have in these sermons continually described the Coming of the Son of God in glory. I have said to you my vocabulary is exhausted. It is. I am a beggar for words. It would be impossible for me to represent this apocalyptic splendor, the consummation triumph, unless I could talk in the parabolic phrase of sun, of system, of nebulae and constellation; unless I could speak to you in the hallelujah chorus of angel choirs and clothe my thoughts in all the colorful beauty of the throne encircling iris; unless I could so describe the Son of God Himself till you should see Him through the transparency of the terrible crystal and from His face there should blaze the radiance of His unmixed, essential glory that should make suns and moons and stars and all the light of Heaven as no more than darkling shadows beneath His feet.

I cannot more describe it.

But the Lord will come with all His saints and the innumerable hosts that have been waiting since the first birth hour of the world for this anticipated moment.

The Mount of Olives will cleave in twain at the touch of His feet. One-half of the mountain will roll back like a fold to the north, the other half to the south. There shall be a very great valley for the gathering of the saints.

At the word of the Lord the Devil's incarnation and his false priest shall be cast into the fiery gulf that will open in the valley of Gehinnom.

He will send an angel to lay hold on Satan, bind him and cast him into that underworld whither he has caused multitudes to descend.

Then will come the judgment on the armies of the nations gathered there.

You will remember that after the translation of the Church to Heaven the Lord will send out elect and converted Jews to preach the Gospel of the kingdom and to announce the Coming of the true Messiah, the true God of all the earth. Any one among the armies of the Anti-Christ who may have given to such a Jew nothing more than a cup of cold water will be spared and permitted to remain in the coming kingdom; but the rest will melt away as wax before the sun, or as the wind-swept chaff that is devoured by flame and fire.

The Jews gathered from every quarter of the world will fall down before the Lord in bitterness of soul. They will ask Him (as the question shall be asked a false prophet) whence came the wounds they see in His hands. (See Zech. 13:6) He will tell them He received them from their fathers, from the blind and unbelieving house of Israel. They will repent with lamentations and tears.

A fountain will be opened in Jerusalem for uncleanness and sin. (See Zech. 13:1) He will Himself be that very fountain. He will pardon. He will forgive.

They will take up the fifty-third chapter of Isaiah and cry:

"... we hid as it were our faces from him; he was despised, and we esteemed him not.

"Surely he hath borne our griefs, and carried our sorrows: yet we did esteem him stricken, smitten of God, and afflicted.

"But he was wounded for our transgressions, he was bruised for our iniquities: the chastisement of our peace was upon him; and with his stripes we are healed.

"All we like sheep have gone astray; we have turned every one to his own way; and the LORD hath laid on him

the iniquity of us all.” (Isa. 53:3-6)

This will indeed be repentance unto life and salvation.

This will be the fulfilment of the promise that the Deliverer should come to Sion and turn away ungodliness from Jacob.

The Lord will receive them.

If in the wisdom and foreknowledge of God the “casting away of them” has been the “reconciling of the world,” the receiving of them again can be nothing less than “life from the dead.” (See Rom. 11:15)

There in this new conformation of the Mount of Olives the Lord will make unto all the people a feast of fat things. He will swallow up death in victory. He will wipe away tears from off all faces and the rebuke, the shame and stigma that has been upon the Jew will He take away from all the earth.

Filled with joy and gladness this repentant and now regenerated people shall cry aloud:

“... Lo, this is our God; we have waited for him, and he will save us: this is the LORD; we have waited for him, we will be glad and rejoice in his salvation.” (Isa. 25:9)

At the head of His redeemed nation and amid the gaze of the encircling hosts of Heaven, in the fellowship of that Church that long before had owned and followed Him, He will enter in kingly triumph into Jerusalem.

It will be the true and anti-typical—Palm Sunday.

Then as written in the twenty-fourth Psalm the voices shall cry:

“Lift up your heads, O ye gates; and be ye lift up, ye everlasting doors; and the King of glory shall come in.” (Ps. 24:7)

From within the gates of the city voices reply and ask:

“Who is this King of glory?” (See Ps. 24:8)

And the full and choral answer will come as when the sea breaks all its thunders on the shore:

“... The LORD strong and mighty, the LORD mighty in battle.

“Lift up your heads, O ye gates; even lift them up, ye everlasting doors; and the King of glory shall come in.” (Ps. 24:8,9)

The atmospheric heavens that now surround the earth are full of dust, bacteria and every germ of disease and death.

With a word the Son of God will cause them to roll away and in their stead shall be a new atmosphere which like a crystal river shall pour its waves of life around the far-flung circumference of the earth.

Through its pure transparence there shall be seen shining in its golden glory that holy city, that promised “place” in the third heavens whither our Lord went two thousand years ago to prepare for His Church.

Into this city whose glory and wonder can alone be described in terms of gold, of jasper, of pearls, of precious stones and cloudless light the main body of the Church shall return.

Those who at the previous judgment seat of reward have been noted for special faithfulness in this hour of the Lord’s absence will remain on earth. They will enter into the “joy of the Lord,” even into this kingdom which is to be His reward as well as theirs. They are to be His associated rulers and administrators in the new day that is to dawn upon the earth.

A mighty river will break out from the temple area of Mount Zion and flow down to the Dead Sea, changing it into a lake of fresh, transparent water. The whole country through which the river shall pour itself will be made beautiful and fruitful as the garden of the Lord.

Jerusalem shall be rebuilt and made resplendent. It shall be built unto the Lord. It will be His throne and dwelling place.

Today its ancient foundations are sunken deep beneath the accumulated debris of centuries; but the promise of God long ago given by His prophet Jeremiah is that this shall be cleared away, the old stones with their hewers marks shall be uncovered and once more as the prophet says, the city shall be builded “upon her own heap.” (See Jer. 30:18)

“Behold, the days come, saith the LORD, that the city shall be built to the LORD from the tower of Hananeel unto the gate of the corner” (Jer. 31:38), and the measuring line shall go forth from Gareb to Goath. It shall be so built that never more will it be “plucked up,” nor “thrown down” by the hand of man. (See Jer. 31:39,40)

The great temple will be erected.

It will be set up according to the plan laid out in the closing chapters of the prophet Ezekiel.

Sir Inigo Jones, the great English architect, once declared should the temple really be built according to the lines there laid down, the structure would rise in such proportions of beauty, majesty and resplendent glory that the wonder of it would fill the earth.

When the city has been built, the temple finished and the vast “suburbs” or gardens designed of the Lord shall encircle Jerusalem, the city, “beautiful for situation,” will indeed be, “the joy of the whole earth.” (See Ps. 48:2)

Many years ago when I went to Rome and across the wide and historic campagna—beyond the ruins of gigantic aqueducts and under the blue sky, shining white and towered and glistening on her ancient hills of seven, and against the background of purple-tinted mountains, for the first time I caught a view of the eternal city, involuntarily I cried aloud, “Rome,” and felt a quivering thrill in all my pulses. Some Italians by my side rose and with voice of exultation, of pride, of triumph and seeming adoration cried out involuntarily even as I had done, but more softly in their native tongue, “Roma.”

When the multitudes of pilgrims shall come from the uttermost parts of the earth to visit and worship the Lord in Jerusalem, to fall down before Him as Thomas did and say, as he did, “My Lord and my God” (See John 20:28); when they get their first glimpse of the holy city they will cry out ere they know it:

“The Lord is there.”

Yes, that will be the name of the city; as it is written:

“... the name of the city from that day shall be, THE LORD IS THERE.” (Ezek. 48:35)

He of whom men have dreamed, whom men have denied, whose very existence has been questioned, whose form has been sought amid the clouds and far stars, He will be there in all the fullness of His godhead bodily, in His deity, His humanity, the mighty God, the Son of God, Son of Mary, Son of Man and Prince of Peace.

And the heart of multitudes will throb and the lips will give utterance to poems of praise as they cry:

“The Lord is there.”

It will be as when the mariner on tempest-tossed sea after long days and nights of weary vigil sees the distant shore break into view and cries, “the land, the land.”

It will be as when dying with thirst in sandy deserts men see the clear and flowing stream and cry, “water, water.”

O, the multitudes as they see the wondrous city, the glorious temple and breathe the pure and health-giving air will cry:

“The Lord is there.”

That will be the name of the city:

“*Jehovah Shammah*—The Lord is there.”

The Lord will remember His covenant with all Israel, with the ten tribes as well as the two, with Ephraim as well as with Judah. For twenty-five hundred years their identity has been lost amid the nations of the East whither they were carried. They have never been hidden from His eyes. By the exercise of His omnipotent power He will reveal them to the world and to themselves. He will call them out and separate them as the fine gold is separated from the dross. With His own stretched-out hand He will gather them; as it is written:

“For thus saith the LORD; Sing with gladness for Jacob, and shout among the chief of the nations: publish ye, praise ye, and say, O LORD, save thy people, the remnant of Israel.

“Behold, I will bring them from the north country, and gather them from the coasts of the earth, and with them the blind and the lame, the woman with child and her that travaileth with child together: a great company shall return thither.

“They shall come with weeping, and with supplications will I lead them: I will cause them to walk by the rivers

of waters in a straight way, wherein they shall not stumble: for I am a father to Israel, and Ephraim is my firstborn.

“Hear the word of the LORD, O ye nations, and declare it in the isles afar off, and say, *He that scattered Israel* (the ten tribes) *will gather* him, and keep him, as a shepherd doth his flock.” (Jer. 31:7-10)

He will bring them into the land of Palestine.

They shall no longer be two nations. They shall no longer be separate peoples, the one wanderers among the Gentiles, and the other sunken in them as those who be in their graves. They shall be one nation upon the mountains of Israel; as it is written:

“And say unto them, Thus saith the Lord GOD; Behold, I will take the children of Israel from among the heathen, whither they be gone, and will gather them on every side, and bring them into their own land:

“And I will make them one nation in the land upon the mountains of Israel; and one king shall be king to them all: and they shall be no more two nations, neither shall they be divided into two kingdoms any more at all:” (Ezek. 37:21,22).

According to His promise the Lord shall make them the head and no longer the tail of nations. They shall be above only and not beneath. They shall be plenteous in goods, in the fruit of the body, in the fruit of cattle, in the fruit of the ground. The Lord shall open to them the good treasure of heaven, to give them rain in season and to bless all the work of their hands. They shall lend to the nations and not borrow; and all the people of the earth shall see that they are called by the name of the Lord; that they are a redeemed, a regenerated and a holy people. (See Deut. 28:1-14)

The twelve apostles, themselves Jews, will be their rulers, administrators and judges, according to the promise which the Lord Himself promised: as it is written:

“And I appoint unto you a kingdom, as my Father hath appointed unto me;

“That ye may eat and drink at my table in my kingdom, and sit on thrones *judging the twelve tribes of Israel.*” (Luke 22:29,30)

The Lord will take His seat in the temple.

He will sit there as Son of Abraham.

As the Son of Abraham He is the covenant owner and possessor of the land.

In the far away centuries God made the covenant with Abraham; as it is written:

“... Unto thy seed have I given this land, from the river of Egypt (from the Nile) unto the great river, the river Euphrates:” (Gen. 15:18)

And writing under the inspiration of the Holy Spirit to the Gentile believers in the Church at Galatia, the Apostle Paul says:

“Now to Abraham and *his seed* were the promises made. He saith not, And to *seeds*, as of many; but as of *one*, And to thy seed, WHICH IS CHRIST.” (Gal. 3:16)

He will sit in the temple as the Son of David.

As the Son of David He is the heir of David's throne; as it is written:

“He shall be great, and shall be called the Son of the Highest: and *the Lord God shall give unto him the throne of his father David:*

“And he shall reign over the house of Jacob for ever; and of his kingdom there shall be no end.” (Luke 1: 32,33)

He shall sit in the temple as the Son of the Virgin Mary.

As the Son of the Virgin Mary He shall be *Jesus* still, He who shall save His people Israel from their sins: as it is written:

“And she shall bring forth a son, and thou shalt call his name JESUS: for he shall save his people from their sins.” (Matt. 1:21)

He shall sit in the temple as the Son of Man.

As the Son of Man He is the supreme, the final Judge; as it is written:

“For as the Father hath life in himself; so hath he given to the Son to have life in himself;

"And hath given him authority to execute judgment also, because he is the Son of man." (John 5:26,27)

He will sit in the temple as the Son of God.

As the Son of God, He will be, *God the Son*, avouched as such by the Father and proclaimed the eternal and righteous king; as it is written:

"But unto the Son he saith, Thy throne, O God, is for ever and ever: a sceptre of righteousness is the sceptre of thy kingdom." (Heb. 1:8)

He will take upon Himself His office as Teacher.

He will teach this Old Book, the Bible.

What a spectacle that! What dynamic of suggestion! What a commentary on some men in the pulpit, the recent graduates of modern theological schools or those resident in their atmosphere and overcome by them; men who have little place in their ministry for the Bible except as a storehouse for texts with which to prove to their own satisfaction and the undoing of the faith of others, that it is not the inspired, infallible Word of God. What a commentary on the men who have gone through the Bible and are ready to accept any authority as final but that:

He will teach the Bible as we have it today.

He will justify the cosmogony of Moses and verify the forecast of all the prophets.

He will make His face to shine from the dullest page till the simplest lines shall be as a flood of effulgent and apocalyptic glory.

He will take His listeners over the hallowed ground of His earthly life; to Bethlehem where He was born, to the place of the wayside inn wherein He lay the night the angels sang. He will take them to Olivet where His soul seemed to ooze from His body in the blood of agony; and He will show the place of His cross where He died and paid the ransom of a world.

He will point out the true and holy sepulchre from whence He arose true God and real, immortal man.

The Word of the Lord shall go forth from Jerusalem.

It will be a worldwide evangelism.

Redeemed and regenerated Israel will be the ministers; as it is written:

"But ye shall be named the Priests of the LORD: men shall call you *the Ministers of our God . . .*" (Isa. 61:6).

With their polyglot tongue they shall carry the tidings to the ends of the earth.

The very name, the very word, "Jew," will lend honor to him who wears it.

Men of the nations will seek out him who is called a Jew that they may learn the things of God.

The nations of the earth will look upon a Jew as the depository of divine truth and will seek them out; as it is written:

"Thus saith the LORD of hosts; In those days it shall come to pass, that ten men shall take hold out of all languages of the nations, even shall take hold of the skirt of him that is a *Jew*, saying, We will go with you: for we have heard that God is with you." (Zech. 8:23)

Isaiah tells us that "all nations" shall flow unto Jerusalem. They will come from the uttermost parts of the earth to behold the Lord.

The universal and perfected means of communication will flash the news to every hamlet, to every spot where human beings dwell.

All shall come to know the Lord is in His holy temple. All shall know it from the least unto the greatest.

As the result of His presence and the outpouring of all the ends of the earth to own and confess Him vast multitudes shall be genuinely regenerated and made one with Him.

As a result of this universal change in man, this coming in of a new nature and the domination of the divine spirit in the heart and conscience, self-interest in its selfish and aggressive form shall be dethroned. As a consequence of this denial of self as an aggressor against another, envy and jealousy will be like serpents with their stings extracted. War will come to an end. Men will no longer butcher each other for an imagined right or wrong. The fields will no longer be sown with the dragons' teeth of hate. Blood will not drench the earth, nor slain men's

bones fertilize the grave-filled soil. Swords will be beaten into plough shares, spears into pruning hooks, nation shall no more lift up sword against nation. They shall learn war no more. Colleges and schools to train men in the art of war will cease to have either students or teachers. All the material of war will be converted into instruments of peace and means for conserving and not for destroying life. The sound of trumpet and of drum will be hushed and the tramp of marching feet no more be heard.

Individual land ownership will be abolished. There will no longer be such a monstrosity on God's fair earth as of one man owning thousands of acres and another not even enough of ground to be buried in; one man worth millions and another worth nothing; one man able to gratify every desire and without an effort, and another with the sweat of his brow, the weariness of his body and the ache of both heart and brain scarce able to meet his minimum need.

The day of graft and syndicate privilege, the conspiracy of the few against the many will be over.

There will be but one ownership of land, the ownership of the Lord.

Round the wide earth the proclamation of the twenty-fourth Psalm will be repeated:

"The earth is the LORD'S, and the fulness thereof; the world, and they that dwell therein." (Ps. 24:1)

All property will be held in trust from the Lord.

Each individual will be a tenant of the King.

Each man will be given a home; as it is written;

"But they shall sit every man under his vine and under his fig tree; and none shall make them afraid: for the mouth of the LORD of hosts hath spoken it." (Mic. 4:4)

There will be competition among men, but it will be a competition in righteousness, in devotion to God. It will be a competition in which he who is most filled with truth and holiness and love, love to man and love to God, ever expanding and deepening love to God through ever expanding and deeper love to man; he who seeks most in all things to please the Lord, shall be most exalted, most renowned. It will be a competition in which the success and enrichment will be measured not in land, but in love, in spiritual life, in soul dominion.

The ban will be taken off the earth.

For six thousand years it has been under the original curse.

The earth is a deep and fruitful matrix. It is filled with seed. It is ever in travail, ever it seeks to bring to the birth. Were it not restrained and hindered and held in check it would bring forth in such abundance that neither ache of back nor sweat of brow would be required to reap and eat and drink of all the wealth of bounty it could bestow.

But God ordained its fruitfulness should be limited.

The sin of man had brought the seed of woe and filled earth's flanks with evil and with poisonous things. Henceforth there should be weeds and briars and thorns and trailing vines to strangle and choke the good seed, to dwarf and kill the fruit.

No care is needed for these hindering things. weeds and thorns and poisonous vines will come up in the night. They will grow in the desert and flourish in the flinty rock; but if you would have the good seed grow, you must toil and labor and water it with your sweat and encourage its tardy growth with your painful care. Rain or drought, chill winds and frost will little hinder the worthless thorns and weeds; but the good seed must be shielded from burning sun, from torrential rain, from mildew, from blast, from east winds that blow unwelcome storms and from insects which like heartless marauders, like the enemy in the dark, go forth to spoil with bite and sting the hoped-for, toiled-for yield.

But in this new day the ban will, indeed, be lifted, and then will the desert blossom as the rose, the orchards will bend low with freighted fruit, the vines will hang their purple clusters in the sun, the earth shall be as the Paradise of God, and man its happy keeper.

Once a year the nations will be under bond to send their representatives to Jerusalem to return thanks for fruitful fields and unfailing seasons.

It will be true, and real, and universal National Thanksgiving.

There will be no sickness, no disease.

And this, primarily, because the Devil will be bound.

Sickness comes from the violation of God's will in mind, in soul and body. This violation is stirred by Satan. He is its inspiration and cause. But Satan himself has the direct power of disease as he also has the power of death.

This is taught by our Lord in the case of the woman who was so bowed and bent with a spirit of infirmity that for eighteen years she had been unable to lift herself up. The Lord healed her on the Sabbath day, and when the ruler of the synagogue protested, the Lord answered and said:

"And ought not this woman, being a daughter of Abraham, whom *Satan hath bound*, lo, these eighteen years, be loosed from this bond on the sabbath day?" (Luke 13:16)

But Satan will be bound for a thousand years. During his incarceration in the pit there will be no sickness nor disease among men. The inhabitants of the land shall not say, "I am sick." The atmosphere as the river of life shall bathe the bodies and invigorate the soul.

Doctors and undertakers will lose their function.

There will be no more outbreaking of sin and violence.

There will be no need of police, no judges, no courts, nor prisons, nor hangman's rope, nor electric chair.

The Lord Himself will rule.

He will rule in righteousness.

He will rule with a rod of iron.

He will dash in pieces and break all opposition as a potter's vessel.

He will put down all rule and authority.

He will reign as the Prince of Peace; but it will be a reign based on righteousness and law.

The righteousness and the law will be inexorable.

If anyone shall tell a lie he shall die in his tracks; as it is written:

". . . he that telleth lies shall not tarry in my sight." (Ps. 101:7)

Human life will be prolonged.

There will be no more an "infant of days."

Infancy will not be spoken of in the term of days.

The sinner who dies a hundred years old will be considered an infant; but he will die accursed. His death will be the sign and seal of God's judgment.

Consider what this prolongation of human life will mean.

What a development there will be of the knowledge and powers of man.

Imagine what an effect this prolongation of life and health would have had upon such an one as Shakespeare or Bacon.

Take some of our great inventors, let them live five hundred years, who can tell the outcome of their ever developing genius?

And the fact that always out of the earth new things can be taken, always fresh discoveries are made of hitherto unknown forces and laws and energies, the exhaustlessness at nature's treasures, all these things prove that the earth was not made for a man of sixty or seventy years, but for men who could live forever.

For a thousand years this government of Christ shall last.

A thousand years in which every problem will be solved.

Human life will no longer be judged as brief, uncertain, a mystery and inadequate.

Government will no longer be built on the sword, cemented by blood, throbbing with hate, pulsing with fear and ruled by oppression, but a government of God administered by the hands of a righteous man who Himself is very God.

A thousand years of prolonged life, with definite aim, the revelation of truth, the fullness of light, of knowledge and understanding, the banishment of sin, sickness and natural death, compensation, satisfaction and a limitless future for the unfolding of human powers and human hopes.

A thousand years of peace, of divine glory and ever-increasing human splendor.

A thousand years in which the humanity of Christ will continually show the limitlessness of its resources, its infinite union with Godhead and interpenetration by divinity, but divinity which never mixes with or changes the humanity.

A thousand years in which the deity of Christ is ever manifesting itself as enthroned in His humanity and through the succeeding years proclaiming the unsullied virginity of His human mother, proving and glorifying the infinite begetting of His infinite Father.

The government and kingdom of the thousand years.

But the thousand years is only the *time limit* of the kingdom.

It has its *eternal* side.

At the end of the thousand years Satan will be loosed from his prison.

He will be loosed that he may test the world.

He is like acid upon metal.

In spite of himself he is the revealer of the true by revealing the false.

In this immense moment of test it will be found that a great multitude who lived under the law of righteousness all these years and had their lives prolonged were never regenerated; never actually accepted the Lord. They surrendered to Him simply as the conquered yield to the conqueror.

Scripture speaks of them continually as those who have "*feigned faith*."

In spite of a thousand years of righteousness and peace; in spite of all the benefits they enjoyed, they are not of God, have not His life and the moment restraint is off and the opportunity given they rebel and come against the holy city and its Holy King.

It is a fearful proclamation of the unchangeableness of human nature.

It is the revelation and pilloring of evolution as the great and all Satanic lie, the lie that has deceived and is fooling the souls of men today.

Fire from Heaven falls upon them and destroys them.

Satan is cast into the lake of fire, the never dying, eternal suffering prisoner of state.

The Great White Throne is set.

The final assize is on.

The Son of God takes His place as the supreme Judge of human kind.

The Christless dead of all ages are raised, even those whose bodies have just been slain by fire.

They will be judged and tried on many counts. All idolaters will be judged and witnessed against by the handiwork of God in the wide creation. The flaming sun of day, the burning stars of night, the whirling earth in its change of seasons all proclaim the one mind, the one will, the one thought, the one thinker behind it all, the eternal God—and render each image worshipper, each follower after a strange god without excuse.

Men will be judged according to the opportunity of the age in which they lived.

They will be judged by:

The *Theophanies of Christ*.

By the *ministry of angels*.

By the *law*.

By the *manifestation of God in the flesh*— Christ at His first advent.

By the *Gospel*.

By *the thousand years*.

None will be found to have his name in the book of life.

The sentence of death originally passed upon them will be reaffirmed.

They will die *the second time*.

They will die by fire!

From this *second death* there is no resurrection.

They will be disembodied souls.

They will be sent out into the wide universe, into the “outer darkness.” (See Matt. 8:12; 22:13; 25:30)

They will be as “. . . wandering stars, to whom is reserved the blackness of darkness for ever.” (Jude 13)

They shall wander through this unlit darkness of eternity as derelicts of humanity, tossed upon an endless and shoreless sea; souls that have missed the purpose for which created—union and fellowship with God.

The earth will then be subject to purifying fire. The very heavens shall be as a winding sheet of flame. Every stain of sin, every mark of evil, every scar of wrong, every memory of unrighteousness, every trace of pain, of sickness, of sorrow, of death and the grave will be washed away by this all-cleansing flood of elemental and judicial fire. The earth will not be destroyed. It will be made new.

It will be *renewed*. As there has been a regeneration of *the soul*, a regeneration of *the body*, so will there be a *regeneration of the earth*. In the old creation God began with *the earth*, then the *body* of man and after that the *soul*. In the new creation He begins with *the soul*, refashions *the body* and *the earth*. Made new and beautiful, clean and holy, it will be lifted into the center of all the universe. Already our solar system is sweeping, astronomers tell us, with accelerating speed toward that starless, that “empty place” in the North of which Job ages ago before telescopes were known so accurately and scientifically spoke. (See Job 26:7)

The earth, redeemed, regenerated, made pure and holy will now be handed by the Son back to the Father. It will be the same world, but that same world *with plus*—plus a race of redeemed and glorified men, one time sinners, lost and undone, but now filled with eternal life, made sons of God and forever more the trophies of infinite love, of measureless grace and that divine wisdom which found a way whereby God could be just and yet the justifier of the ungodly, justifying everyone who should believe in Jesus.

A world of saved men, the center of the amazed, the adoring gaze of the measureless hosts of Heaven, glorifying God because of the OMNIPOTENCE OF LOVE. A world upon which the angels of God shall look with rapturous joy, repeat and proclaim to Heaven’s remotest bound the all-embracing truth—GOD IS LOVE—Father, Son and Holy Ghost—GOD IS LOVE.

The holy city, the new Jerusalem, the Church as the Tabernacle of God shall descend into the regenerated earth.

The Lord Himself will take up His abode among men.

As He has revealed God to be Redeemer and Saviour, King of righteousness and truth, He will now reveal Him in all His fullness as the Father. He will be in His own person the Father of the everlasting age; so that, in Him the Christian may behold the Father’s face and hear His voice; and yet, find Him to be *this same Jesus*, our great God and Saviour in whom shall continue to dwell all the fullness of the deity bodily.

The earth shall be, no longer the footstool, but the throne of God.

The whole universe will swing about this radiant center, looking with adoring wonder upon Jesus, the Christ, the Son as the revelation of the infinite God, *the disclosure of His heart*.

The redeemed shall be men.

They shall be God-men.

There shall be no longer the organized distinction among men known as nations.

Nations are for administration and governmental restraint.

Nations bear witness of the presence of sin, needing restraint.

There will be no sin and therefore no need of human government restraint.

Israel, however, will be retained in national form, not for administration of government, but as a memorial of

the days of time and the nation specially chosen of God.

The order of the Eternal State will be:

The Father.

The Son.

The Church.

Israel—the memorial nation.

Men.

The condition of life is described in Holy Writ:

“And I heard a great voice out of heaven saying, Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men, and he will dwell with them, and they shall be his people, and *God himself* shall be with them, and be their God.

“And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away.” (Rev. 21:3,4)

Eternity has opened for man.

God and man are in partnership forever.

God and man and God in man rule the universe.

The hideous, ages long nightmare of sin and rebellion is over.

GOD IS ALL IN ALL.

There is only one word to describe this KINGDOM OF GOD.

That word is “INCREASE.”

“Of the increase of his government and peace there shall be no end . . .” (Isa. 9:7).

The government of Him who while David’s Lord is—David’s God.

No END, only INCREASE, always increasing, always unfolding fresh wonders, fulfilling that immense, measureless promise made to the Church and always to be realized in and by the Church first, in which “. . .in the ages to come. . .” God will “. . .SHEW THE EXCEEDING RICHES OF HIS GRACE IN HIS KINDNESS TOWARD US THROUGH CHRIST JESUS.” (Eph. 2:7)

This is the eternal future for all who own and confess Jesus Christ crucified, dead, buried, risen again, ascended to Heaven and now seated at the right hand of God the Father; all who own Him as Redeemer, Saviour and Lord.

The prelude to this immense kingdom and glory of God may take place at any hour by the secret, sudden descent of the Lord into the air and the calling up thither of His true and redeemed Church.

If the Lord should come tonight those of you who have not accepted and owned Him would be left behind to woe, to anguish, to the final second death, to eternal disembodiment and banishment in the endless darkness and as hopeless suffering wanderers forever.

This is my last sermon of the series.

During ten weeks I have set the truth before you and warned you of coming events and the only way of salvation.

How shall I appeal to you in this hour, for now is the accepted time, now is the day of salvation.

Shall I appeal to you by the sorrows of eternal regret, the agony of eternal remorse? Shall I appeal to you by all the ties of human love; by the father who loved you and stinted himself for you; by the mother who bore you, was devoted to you and never ceased to pray for you? Shall I appeal by the little child, the song and the sunbeam in your life, that child that was taken from you, dwells in Heaven, but whose absence has made your home empty? Shall I appeal by the goodness of God; by the providence that has been round you and preserved you to this moment? Shall I appeal by the wounds of Christ?

The other day, over there in the trenches a young French soldier lay dying on the field where he fell. He heard the shouting and felt the rush as the column swept by. He raised his head and asked the meaning of it. They told him the enemy’s lines had been taken and the tri-color was waving above them; as he fell back into the death that

waited for him with his last breath he cried aloud, *"Vive La France. I have not died in vain."*

Will you let Christ die in vain?

Shall His blood be shed for naught?

I can make no more appeal.

You remember, do you not, when you were a boy, when you were tired or hurt, how good it was to lean your head against your mother's breast and feel her loving arms go round you, and hear her gentle words that bade you lie still and rest there above her beating heart, beating for you?

They say among the last words soldiers utter who die over there, not mere boys, but sturdy, brave, heroic men is the one word—*"Mother."*

With all a father's sacrifice, a mother's gentleness, the eternal God wants to put His arms around you (those arms He flung out wide and had them nailed on the cross for you). He wants to put His arms around you, caress you, soothe you, calm you. He is saying to you in soft, persuasive, sympathetic tones, "Come unto Me and rest." (See Matt. 11:28)

All that is required of you is to yield yourself, confess your faith in Jesus Christ the eternal Son.

Hear my last words, words whereby, if you will receive them, you may be saved, saved now, saved forever, find joy in God, take part in the coming thousand years and in all the *after* eternal glories.

These are the potent, all-meaning, all-saving words for you, if you will.

Hear them I pray you:

"That if thou shalt confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, and shalt believe in thine heart that God hath raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved." (Rom. 10:9)